THE STRUCTURE OF ARGUMENTATION IN ARABIC:
EDITORIALS AS A CASE STUDY

BY
Said EL-Shiyab

A Thesis submitted for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy
Heriot-Watt University, Edinburgh
December, 1990
ABSTRACT

This thesis attempts to investigate the structure of Arabic argumentative discourse in general and 'editorials' as an argumentative text-form in particular and the problems this discourse raises for translators. This investigation includes the identification of editorials' main constituents, the types of clause relations typical of this form of argumentation and their contribution to meaning continuity of such discourse, and certain textual phenomena, i.e repetition, parallelism, thematization, paragraphing, etc., and their unequivocal significance in translation. To this effect, random samples were taken from three different Arabic newspapers, i.e Al-Ahräm, Al-Ra'y, Al-Watan, to show how the structure of these texts gives rise to ambiguity when translated (literally) into English.

To achieve these objectives, this study uses a semantic, structural, and pragma-semio-textual approach to analyze and then translate the texts chosen, as language in this study is considered to be a form of behaviour (Halliday 1973) that cannot be studied in isolation from its social, cultural, and contextual contexts in which it is used.

Our textual analyses have shown some interesting results. First, editorials have their own generic structure, and such structure is presented in specific stages. Second, editorials as well as other argumentative texts are dominated by semantic causal relations; these relations tend to have a psychological impact on text-readers and should be accounted for in translation. Third, editorials favour the cohesive type of lexical repetition not only for cohesion purposes but also for persuasive functions as well. Fourth, editorials use many parallel constructions for conviction and persuasive functions. Fifth, editorials have semantic structures and stylistic features that cause problems for the English reader. These features require attention during the process of translation. All these issues tend to reflect the nature of editorials within argumentation and their unequivocal significance within the study of discourse.
ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The preparation of this work as well as its production have naturally drawn upon the ideas of others who work in this area. Those people have added immeasurably to my understanding of the paradoxes and the problems of linguistics and translation. Therefore my greatest debt is owed to my two supervisors, Dr. James Dickins and Dr. Malcolm Williams, who will be aware, each in his own way, of the contribution they have made, not least in reminding me of the multifaceted nature of linguistics and its effect on translation, but also for their encouragement and patience.

I am also indebted to other people who commented generously on this work. In particular, I am grateful to Professors P. Newmark, T.A. van Dijk, W. Dressler, W. Greaves, W. Mann, R. Hasan. I sincerely acknowledge their advice, positive comments and constructive criticism.

A special thanks is owed to my family. In particular my wife, Tammy, and my two children, Adam and Amy. I am indebted to them for their patience, encouragement and long lasting comfort and support throughout this thesis.

I am also grateful to Yarmouk University, not only for sponsoring me, but also for their moral support.

Finally, I am grateful to Edinburgh University Library for providing me with all the facilities needed for doing such a research, i.e. office, books, etc. To them, I am greatly indebted.
TRANSLITERATION NOTES

In order to facilitate the pronunciation of Arabic words appearing in the original texts, the following transliteration system has been used for this study.

1. Arabic Consonants

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>Transliteration</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ا</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ب</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ت</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ج</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>د</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ح</td>
<td>h</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>خ</td>
<td>k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ض</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ط</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ي</td>
<td>y</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. Arabic Vowels

   **Long Vowels**
   - َابل: َ | ََ | َََ: َََ
     - ًاء: ً | ًَ | ًََ: ًََ

   **Short Vowels**
   - ا: ا | اَ | اََ: اََ
   - ى: ى | ىَ | ىََ: ىََ

3. The glottal stop /'/ is omitted from initial position.
4. The repetition of the same consonant as in [akkada] 'affirmed' indicates a geminated letter.
The translation employed for the analyzed texts has been made as literal as possible so as to provide a sense of the Arabic structure. This is also unequivocally significant to make the understanding of the analyzed texts more accessible and easy to follow. There are cases where certain lexical items have been maintained in translation for clarity and exposition reasons. The analysis of these texts has not been made in any way according to the English Translation, but rather, it has been made according to the Arabic Transliterated texts. The proposed translation for all the texts is contained in Appendix B.
**ABBREVIATIONS**

The following abbreviations are used throughout Appendix A:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ampl-Contrac:</td>
<td>Amplification-Contraction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Develop:</td>
<td>Development</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NDC:</td>
<td>Non-defining clause</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhet:</td>
<td>Rhetorical</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emph:</td>
<td>Emphatic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MS:</td>
<td>Matching support</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen-Spec:</td>
<td>Generic-Specific</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contra-Expect:</td>
<td>Contra-Expectation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp/Conclusion:</td>
<td>Temporal in a form of conclusion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod:</td>
<td>Modal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Condition-Sem:</td>
<td>Condition from a semantic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consequence-Prag:</td>
<td>Consequence from a pragmatic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consequence-Sem:</td>
<td>Consequence from a semantic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Counter-Exp-Prag:</td>
<td>Counter-expectation from a pragmatic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (1): Hierarchical organization in language</td>
<td>page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (3): The interpretation of text-categorization of Werlich (1983)</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (5): Representation of English language editorials</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (6): Notional discourse types (fourth parameter, tension, is not represented)</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (7): Representation of some discourse genres</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (8): Parameters for distinguishing between discourse types</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (9): Representation of language system according to Halliday</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (10): Notional representation of 'reference' according to Halliday &amp; Hasan</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (11): Representation of cohesive relations</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (12): Manifestation of Similarity Chain</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (13): Actor-Process relation</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (14): Manifestation of the constituent 'Situation'</td>
<td>208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (15): Representation of Actor-Process relation in the text-form under discussion</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (16): Types of evaluation</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (17): Manifestation of lexical items and type of relation in the text-form under discussion</td>
<td>226</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (18): Types of exhortative conclusions</td>
<td>231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (19): Linear representation and type of clause relations of the text-form under discussion</td>
<td>236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (20):</td>
<td>Representation of a causal process</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (21):</td>
<td>Representation of the semantic structure of the text-form under discussion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (22):</td>
<td>The pattern of the text-producer's argumentation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (23):</td>
<td>Chain formation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (24):</td>
<td>Interaction of elements within similarity chain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (25):</td>
<td>Manifestation of repetition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (26):</td>
<td>Demonstration of the source of confusion within a series of references</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (27):</td>
<td>Constituents of editorials</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diagram (28):</td>
<td>The process of translating Arabic argumentative text-forms</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE OF CONTENTS

ABSTRACT ........................................... i
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS ................................. ii
TRANSLITERATION NOTES ......................... iii
TRANSLATION NOTES ............................... iv
ABBREVIATIONS ..................................... v
LIST OF DIAGRAMS ................................. vi
INTRODUCTION ....................................... 1
   The purpose of the thesis ...................... 4
   The organization of the study ............... 7

CHAPTER 1  APPROACHES TO THE STUDY OF DISCOURSE

1.0  Introduction ................................. 10
1.1  The notion of text and discourse .......... 11
1.2  Approaches to discourse .................... 17
   1.2.1  Harris' approach ....................... 21
   1.2.2  The work of Winter .................... 24
   1.2.3  Longacre's approach ................... 29
   1.2.4  De Beaugrande & Dressler's approach . 33
1.3  Summary ..................................... 40

CHAPTER 2  DISCOURSE, TEXT-TYPE AND TRANSLATION

2.0  Introduction .................................. 42
2.1  Discourse and translation ................ 44
   2.1.1  Translation: past and present ....... 45
   2.1.2  Translation and meaning .............. 52
   2.1.3  Translation and culture .............. 53
2.2  Text-types categorization .................. 56
   2.2.1  A comparative approach to text-types . 56
   2.2.2  English language editorials .......... 68
CHAPTER 3 THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK FOR THE STUDY OF COHESION

3.0 Introduction .............................................. 99
3.1 Halliday’s systemic model for the analysis of texts .......... 100
3.2 Relevance of the systemic model to the analysis ............. 108
3.3 Halliday & Hasan’s (1976) approach to cohesion ............. 111
   3.3.1 Reference ............................................. 115
   3.3.2 Substitution ......................................... 117
   3.3.3 Ellipsis ............................................. 119
   3.3.4 Conjunctions ....................................... 120
   3.3.5 Lexical cohesion .................................... 122
3.4 Hasan’s (1983) modification of the lexical cohesion category .. 128
   3.4.1 Definition of chain .................................. 133
      3.4.1.1 Identity chain .................................. 133
      3.4.1.2 Similarity chain ................................ 134
3.5 Koch’s (1982) approach to cohesion in Arabic .............. 135
3.6 Summary ..................................................... 140
CHAPTER 4  METHODOLOGY

4.0 Introduction .......................... 142
4.1 Source of data ........................ 143
4.2 Selection of editorials ............... 145
4.3 Minimum unit of analysis ............. 149
4.4 Means and methods of analysis ....... 155
4.5 Rank and indentation system ......... 159
4.6 Set of clause relations ............... 166
4.7 Analysis of textual cohesion ......... 191

4.7.1 Lexical cohesion .................... 191
  4.7.1.1 Repetition of lexical items .... 192
  4.7.1.2 Identity and similarity chains .. 193
  4.7.1.3 Types of process ................ 196

4.8 The study of parallelism ............. 198

4.9 Summary ................................ 199

CHAPTER 5  THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE CONSTITUENTS OF EDITORIALS AT BOTH HIGH AND LOW LEVELS

5.0 Introduction .......................... 201
5.1 Relations between constituents of editorials .......................... 202
  5.1.1 Relations between constituents of editorials at a low level ... 205
  5.1.2 Relations between constituents of editorials at a high level ... 239
  5.1.3 Cohesion manifestation of editorials .......................... 249

CHAPTER 6  REPETITION IN ARGUMENTATIVE EDITORIAL TEXT-FORMS

6.0 Introduction .......................... 253
6.1 Manifestations of repetition .......... 262
  6.1.1 The identity chain ................ 263
  6.1.2 Similarity chain .................. 264
  6.1.3 Repetition of exact lexical items in editorials ................ 267

6.2 Repetition and persuasion ............ 271
6.3 Parallelism .......................... 273
6.3.1 The nature of parallelism... 274
6.3.2 The significance of parallelism... 285

CHAPTER 7  THE TRANSLATION OF ARABIC EDITORIALS

7.0 Introduction... 288
7.1 Pragma-semio-textual approach to translating editorials... 289
  7.1.1 Rendition... 296
    7.1.1.1 The preservation of lexical items... 297
    7.1.1.2 Addition/deletion and replacement of lexical items... 300
  7.1.2 Theme-rheme constructions... 306
    7.1.2.1 Thematic patterning... 306
    7.1.2.2 Thematization in Arabic editorials... 312
    7.1.2.3 Thematic constructions in translation... 317
  7.1.3 Paragraphing... 319
  7.1.4 Rhetorical and cultural style of argumentation... 323
  7.1.5 Coping with Arabic-English counter-argument... 331

CHAPTER 8  CONCLUSIONS

8.0 Introduction... 334
8.1 The generic structure of editorials... 335
8.2 Types of clause relations... 338
8.3 The effect of lexical repetition... 339
8.4 The persuasive function of parallelism... 340
8.5 Approach to translating editorials... 340
8.6 Implications for future research... 343

APPENDIX A: Analysis of Arabic editorials... 346
APPENDIX B: Arabic original editorials and their translation... 367
APPENDIX C: English original editorials... 439
APPENDIX D: Arabic original editorials... 440
REFERENCES... 461
INTRODUCTION

Introduction

The initial motivation behind this study is to investigate the problems inherent in the process of translating Arabic argumentative discourse in general and editorials in particular. The study analyzes the structure of these text-forms and identifies their main constituents in order to see how these texts-forms, when translated literally into English, give rise to ambiguities. These ambiguities will be examined and their significance for the translator will be highlighted. Also, an attempt will be made to suggest ways in which these ambiguities can be eliminated. To achieve this goal, the study uses structural, semantic and pragma-semiotic approaches to analyze the text-forms chosen, as language in this study is considered to be a form of behaviour (Halliday 1973) that cannot be studied in abstraction from the social setting in which it is used. This means that the thesis attempts to examine the fact that translating Arabic argumentative text-forms (i.e. editorials) cannot be done on the basis of its linguistic elements alone; rather it involves the study of a great variety of non-linguistic characteristics.

Furthermore, this study analyzes editorials in the light of Kaplan and Koch's claims that languages have their own distinctive ways of argumentation (Kaplan 1966, 1983; Koch 1980,
1982, 1983)); it also examines the issue of whether what has been claimed by Kaplan and Koch coincides with Al-Khafajiy (1982: 49-50) when he suggests that when an Arabic text is transferred into another language, it tends to lose its comprehensibility and effectiveness, but when other texts are transferred into Arabic, they gain more effectiveness. This aspect will be subjected to further investigation and some justifications will be given as to whether Arabic can accommodate other languages or not. Along these lines, we will also consider the claims of Justice (1987) who argues that the difficulty of learning Arabic or even comprehending it has to do with its linguistic and non-linguistic systems. There is a richness in the lexical system in Arabic, and this system, when learned by non-natives, tends to be vague or ambiguous because of the wide shades of meaning and different kinds of social and cultural implications most lexical items have. This, according to Justice, creates problems which makes Arabic tiresome and complicated.

The reason behind the choice of studying argumentative discourse, approached particularly from the translator's point of view, is that the means and processes each language uses to present its argumentative discourse are different. These means and processes are more different in argumentative discourse than in other types of discourse, (i.e. narrative, instructional, etc) This is true as argumentation in this study is held to be culture bound (Longacre, 1983; Dijk, 1989); it involves the study of the cultural and ideological structures of a particular language. For example, as Koch (1982, 1983) argues, Arabic tends to
persuade by weight of presentation, whereas this way of argumentation is considered to be inappropriate in English.

There are different methods of constructing an argument; this aspect will be illustrated later. All this indicates that producers of editorials, in Arabic as well as English, have their own ways of argumentation, and these ways may result from the social settings in which each language has developed and the uses to which it is put. This is so because editorials, like other genres, have cultural overtones which complicate their translation and make certain aspects quite difficult to translate. However, for the native speaker of Arabic, the structure of editorials is not usually ambiguous or vague, but when translated literally, this structure acquires different and sometimes odd meanings for the English reader. This oddity, according to Kaplan (1966, 1983) and Koch (1980, 1982; 1983), stems from the fact that the native speaker of a particular language, Arabic for example, employs a linguistic pattern, a rhetoric, and a sequence of thought which all violate the expectations of the English reader. Therefore, ambiguity and vagueness often occur in the English target text.

Another reason behind the study of this form of argumentative discourse is the complexity and the range of the subject-matter found in this form of argumentation. There is a great variety of linguistic phenomena found in editorials. For example, one often finds stretches of expository, descriptive, narrative, and argumentative passages. However, despite these various passages, editorials tend to be dominated by
argumentative passages. These passages constitute the central core of this text-form. All these observations will be investigated through a semantic, structural, pragma-semiotic and translational study of the text-form under discussion.

The purpose of this thesis

Since the process of translation involves translating a text and not a sentence and it also involves what goes on beyond the sentence, the subject of this thesis lies within the field of text-linguistics. This section defines the scope and the limitations of this thesis. It specifies the aims it attempts to achieve and the issues it seeks to examine.

While one of the objectives of this thesis is to study the structure of Arabic argumentative discourse in general and editorials as an argumentative text-form in particular, its main purpose is to make careful examination of problems this discourse raises for translators. To achieve this objective, the study approaches the analysis of this text-form from two angles. First, it attempts to analyze the structure and identify the main constituents of this discourse. Second, it shows how textual structures of editorials are signalled and what kind of signalling expressions identify their main constituents. For ease of reference, here are the issues involved:

1. The identification of the generic structure of editorials and their main constituents. That is, the internal composition
and the realization of their components. Under this heading, an attempt will be made to investigate the following:

a. The types of clause relations typical of this argumentative discourse and their contribution to the coherence of these texts-forms.

b. Repetition; its rhetorical effect and cohesive role in editorials. This includes lexical repetition, identity and similarity chains, and other cohesive devices.

c. The persuasive function of parallelism and its effect on text-structure as well as on text-readers.

d. Theme-rheme structure in editorials and its underlying pragmatic function.

e. The micro/macro-linguistic problems inherent in editorials and their contribution, particularly when translated into English, to the incoherence and oddity of this argumentative discourse.

Within the scope of (e), it has been assumed that editorials, as a discourse genre, yield macro-linguistic translational problems (i.e. addition and deletion of certain lexical items, paragraphing, theme-rheme structure, etc.)
arising from within their structure. This structure leads to some kind of ambiguity when translated into English.

To tackle this form of argumentation, Winter's (1977) and Beekman & Callow's (1988) approaches will be used to identify the main constituents of editorials; these approaches will also be used to demonstrate the types of clause relation typical of this kind of discourse and their contribution to the semantic and pragmatic meanings of these text-forms. The inter-clausal relations and other cohesive devices linking constituents of editorials will be analyzed following Halliday & Hasan's (1976) approach. The investigation of these inter-clausal relations will not be restricted to the application of a semantic approach, but will also be examined from a pragmatic point of view; such an approach will be used to identify the intended meanings (Searle, 1969; Leech, 1983; and Grice, 1975), and the communicative and the social functions underlying this kind of discourse.

After the analysis of these semantic relations and other cohesive devices inherent within the structure of editorials, an attempt will be made to discuss the macro-linguistic problems found among the constituents of this kind of discourse. These macro-linguistic problems will be highlighted, and the significance of these problems for the translator and interpreter will be emphasized. These problems will be tackled by suggesting an appropriate and effective approach to translating this form of argumentation. The approach will be presented and its efficiency and appropriateness will be tested through the judgements of native speakers of English.
The organization of the study

This thesis consists of eight chapters. This introduction has introduced the aim and the intended significance of this study; it has also illustrated the purpose of this thesis and shown how it is organized.

Chapter (1) is mainly concerned with some relevant material that has been produced in the field of text-linguistics. It attempts to investigate the notions of 'text' and 'discourse'. This investigation is included simply because of its contribution to the understanding of some theoretical issues behind my approach to text-structure.

Chapter (2) provides a historical background of the nature as well as the process of translation; it also investigates the correlation between discourse and translation. In addition, this chapter deals with the categorization of text-types; since this chapter focuses on putting texts into appropriate text-types, it will enable us to identify the criteria for such a classification and see on what basis these texts are categorized. This chapter also includes an examination of the different text-typological foci.

Chapter (3) investigates the notion of cohesion; it takes into account the approaches adopted by Halliday & Hasan (1976); Halliday (1973); and Hasan (1983, 1984a, 1984b). Also, Koch's (1982) approach will be presented to examine the notion of cohesion in Arabic. Within this chapter, the notion of connectivity will be discussed, and semantic relations and other
cohesive devices will be presented. This chapter clears the way for my methodology which will be presented in Chapter (4). In this chapter, an attempt will be made to identify the text-type and the text-form this study deals with; the chapter also describes the basis on which the data were chosen for the analysis and the methodological frameworks utilized in the analysis.

Chapter (5) is mainly concerned with the analysis; it investigates the issues to be examined in this thesis (see p. 4-5). Chapter (6) examines the textual phenomenon of repetition; it demonstrates how parallelism has a persuasive function in editorials.

After the investigation of the semantic relations and other cohesive devices, an attempt will be made to identify the problems arising from the structure of editorials. This brings us to Chapter (7) which will focus on tackling the problems (i.e. cohesion, structure, etc.) characteristic of this type of discourse and providing suggestions as to how to improve the structure of this discourse in translation. These suggestions will be demonstrated and their contribution to the efficiency and appropriateness of these text-forms will be tested. This is followed by Chapter (8) which concludes the study by summarizing the results of our analysis and considering practical applications and wider implications for future research.

As for my data, it is contained in four appendices: Appendix A (p. 346) contains the analysis of the Arabic editorials; this appendix also shows the main constituents of these text-forms and the relations holding between their main constituents.
Appendix B (p. 367) presents a transliteration of editorials and their translation. These text-forms, in their transliteration, are presented in this appendix as they appear in their original texts. In this appendix, as well as the text-forms used throughout this thesis, I have used two types of translation. One is a very literal interlinear translation (i.e. word-for-word translation) while the other is more idiomatic translation. The idiomatic translation is not meant to be the kind of translation which would be provided by an Arabic-English translator. That is, even though the second translation is more idiomatic than the interlinear translation, it still maintains a large degree of parallelism with the original Arabic text-form; this translation therefore comes halfway between a simple explication of the elements in the Arabic text-form (as provided by the interlinear translation), and a proper idiomatic translation.

The reason behind doing all this in Appendix B is the fact that our main purpose here is to investigate the text-structure of Arabic editorials (rather than to provide translation of them). It is therefore more important to reflect this text-form structure in any English translation given than to produce a translation of a type which would seem natural to a native English speaker. At the same time, it is vital that this translation comes moderately close to one which would seem natural to a native English speaker.

As for Appendix C (p. 439), it contains the original English texts; this is followed by Appendix D (p. 440) which contains the original Arabic editorials.
1.0 Introduction

In the introduction, I have indicated that I will be working within the framework of discourse analysis; later in the thesis, I shall consider the analysis of editorials, their structures, and the manifestations of their meanings. This chapter is concerned with relevant material that has been produced in the field of textlinguistics; it constitutes part of the literature review of my work. The chapter is divided into three sections. Section 1.1 gives a preliminary overview of the notions of text and discourse; how they have been defined, and how these notions differ from one another. A discussion of these two notions is included in this study to enhance our understanding of some theoretical issues involved in an analysis of the structure of texts.

Since my work involves the study of discourse analysis or text-linguistics, Section 1.2 gives an overview of the different kinds of approaches to discourse and discusses the main factors responsible for the neglect of discourse study. This section may be regarded as constituting the basic background of this thesis. Section 1.3 is a summary of the basic arguments and the different notions presented in the preceding sections.
1.1 The notion of text and discourse

Much work has been done on the notions of 'text' and 'discourse' in terms of their definitions and their basic characteristics (Longacre 1974c, 1978, 1983; De Beaugrande 1980, 1984; Grimes 1972, 1975; and Dijk 1972, 1977, 1984), but unfortunately few of these scholars have made a clear distinction between 'text' and 'discourse' (Kress cited in Dijk 1985a: 27). Kress argues that in recent discussions of language structure beyond the level of the sentence, the terms 'text' and 'discourse' have tended to be used without sharp distinction. On the whole, discussions with a more sociological basis or aim tend to use the term 'discourse' (Corsaro 1981), while those with a more linguistic basis tend to use the term 'text' (Van Dijk 1978). However, some attempts have been made to differentiate clearly between these terms. A representative example of this is the work of Dijk (1981). Dijk proposes an extremely important distinction which he attempts to base on theoretical grounds. According to Dijk, 'text' is an abstract theoretical construct which is related to the deep structure of all utterances, whereas 'discourse' is the role of text in the process of communication. The textuality of such deep structures, Dijk argues, can be studied by an autonomous linguistic grammar.

Corsaro (1981) defines these notions differently from Dijk; Corsaro defines 'discourse' as a category that belongs to the social domain, whereas 'text' is a category that belongs to and derives from the linguistic one. As for the relation between
text and discourse, Kress (1985) argues that the relation between 'discourse' and 'text' is that of realization. This means that discourse, as the voice of an institution, finds its expression in text. Text is the concrete material that is produced in discourse. It is the structure of messages which has socially ascribed unity (Hodge & Kress 1988).

Longacre (1965) defines the relation between text and discourse as that of hierarchial organization. He recognizes a hierarchial organization in language from discourse to morpheme perhaps with an essential difference between each level. Longacre proposes that 'text' and 'discourse' are to be regarded as two successive levels in this hierarchy which exhibit both semantic and syntactic properties. The following diagram is my representation of this hierarchial organization:

```
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Discourse</th>
<th>Highest level</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Text</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sentence</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Morpheme</td>
<td>Lowest level</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

Diagram (1)
Hierarchical organization in language

De Beaugrande (1980) does not use the same definition as Dijk even though he is working within the same area. De
Beaugrande's understanding of the term 'discourse' is similar to that of Van Dijk, but his understanding of the notion 'text' is different. For De Beaugrande, 'texts' are not, as defined by Dijk, abstract theoretical constructs; they are the actual instances of communication. De Beaugrande (1984) defines 'text' as a spontaneously occurring manifestation of language; it can thus be defined as a set of expressions or as a communicative language event in a context, whereas 'discourse' is a set of texts considered to be reciprocally related. De Beaugrande points out that even though the two terms are different, they are similar in that each one has its own but related systemic function. De Beaugrande states:

"The TEXT can be defined as a naturally occurring manifestation of language, i.e. as a communicative language event in a context. The SURFACE TEXT is the set of expressions actually used; these expressions make some knowledge EXPLICIT, while other knowledge remains IMPLICIT, though still applied during processing. A DISCOURSE is a set of texts considered to be mutually relevant."

(De Beaugrande 1984: 63)

Werth (1984) attempts to draw a different kind of distinction between 'text' and discourse. Werth uses discourse to refer to either 'a subject area or function' as a term within that subject area; he argues that when discourse refers to the 'subject area', it refers to the linguistic level above the sentence, considered as an object of study. When discourse
refers to 'function', it denotes a unified set of one or more sentences, connected semantically, and (ideally) representing a completed utterance. Werth seems dissatisfied with Dijk's definition of discourse as used indiscriminately to refer to an abstract theoretical construct which is related to the deep structure of all utterances.

Winter (1982), in his study of the clause and the sentence, aims at explaining the principles of contextual grammar. What is meant by contextual grammar here is that approach to linguistics which holds that the meaning or the grammatical status of a clause, for example, can only be determined in relation to other clauses in the same context (c.f. Winter 1982: Sec. 2). Winter is not interested in the theoretical notions of 'text' and 'discourse'. Thus, he uses 'text' and 'discourse' interchangeably to refer to interrelated communicative stretches of language. Winter does not restrict these stretches of connected communication to any particular size or length, but rather allows them to be any size. Hoey (1983) does not distinguish between these two notions in the same way, even though he and Winter are very close associates and have worked together in the same area. Hoey abandons the use of the term 'text' and uses the term 'passage' instead because of the varying implications accompanying the use of the term text. Hoey states in his own terminology that discourse can be defined as:

"Any stretch of spoken or written language that is felt as complete in itself."
He also defines the term 'passage' as:

"Any extract from a discourse (it would have been helpful to have used the term text for this purpose, but it has been employed by others for too many purposes to be of any value here)."

(Hoey 1983: 15)

The definitions given above indicate that the notions text and discourse are typically defined in such a way that they share a number of common characteristics. In this study, these two notions will be treated distinctively for practical and theoretical reasons. Text will be used here at the semantic level; it is a unit of meaning which is realized by lexicogrammatical units (Halliday 1975). The creation of this semantic unit is actually influenced by situational parameters such as field, mode, and tenor. Discourse, on the other hand, will be used at the semiotactic level (Hodge & Kress, 1988); it is more abstract than text. Discourse refers to the social process by which meaning is manifested. It is the social process by which people interchange, as of ideas, and express themselves in such a way that they readily and clearly understand one another. This social process is connected to the world in which we live. These definitions have been adapted because of the fact that the study under discussion is not concerned only with the description of the surface structure but also with the underlying
structure as well. The tables that follow show the interpretations as well as the definitions of the notions of 'text' and 'discourse':

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Dijk:</strong></td>
<td>An abstract theoretical construct which is related to the deep structure of all utterances.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Corsaro:</strong></td>
<td>A category that belongs to and derives from the linguistic one.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Kress:</strong></td>
<td>The concrete material object produced in discourse. The structure of messages.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Longacre:</strong></td>
<td>A hierarchical organization, lower than discourse, which exhibits semantic and syntactic properties.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>De Beaugrande:</strong></td>
<td>The actual instance of communication; a set of expressions or a communicative language event in context.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Winter:</strong></td>
<td>As discourse, text is an interrelated communicative stretch of language</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Adapted from Halliday (1975)</strong></td>
<td>A semantic unit; a unit of meaning which is realized by lexicogrammatical units. The creation of this semantic unit is influenced by situational parameters such as field, mode and tenor.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table (2)  
Definitions of the notion of 'discourse'

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dijk:</td>
<td>The role of text in the process of communication.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corsaro:</td>
<td>A category that belongs to the social domain.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hodge &amp; Kress:</td>
<td>The social process in which texts are embedded.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Longacre:</td>
<td>a hierarchical organization, higher than text, which exhibits semantic and syntactic properties.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>De Beaugrande:</td>
<td>A set of texts considered to be reciprocally related.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winter:</td>
<td>As text, discourse is an interrelated communicative stretch of language</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adapted from Hodge &amp; Kress (1988)</td>
<td>the social process (i.e. actions, etc.) by which meaning is manifested. It is the social process by which people interchange, as of ideas. It is the social process by which people express themselves in such a way that they readily and clearly understand one another.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1.2 Approaches to discourse

The previous section attempted to give an overview of the notions of text and discourse and to show how these two notions have been defined. In what follows, an attempt will be made to shed some light on different approaches to discourse and
elucidate some of the basic factors that have discouraged linguists from studying this notion.

Work in this area does not only pertain to what goes beyond the sentence but also to the paragraph and even the whole discourse. However, in the 50s and 60s, linguists have felt that work on discourse is complicated either because nobody has worked before in this area or because what goes beyond the sentence does not lie within the field of linguistics, philosophy and psychology, but rather within the field of rhetoric and literary criticism (Grimes 1975).

The fact that linguists have shied away from the study of discourse may be due to the enormity of the subject-matter (Grimes 1975), the amount of material linguists have to cope with, and the way in which discourse should be approached. Going beyond the sentence means that linguists need to develop completely new analytical models. It is this need which leads many people to say that this is a different area of study from traditional sentence-orientated linguistics. This means that linguists need models for conversation, novels, editorials, and every other form of text that they need to investigate.

Furthermore, the limitations that are built into many theories of linguistics contribute to the neglect of discourse; these limitations make the process of investigating discourse difficult. For example, Bloomfield (1933) defines the sentence as 'an independent form' (ibid: 170), excluding any larger or more complex form from linguistics. In doing so, Bloomfield excludes any study that goes beyond the sentence whether it is a
text, dialogue or a novel. Therefore, he restricts our study of language.

There is nothing wrong with Bloomfield's definition from the point of view sentence-linguistics. However, it does not provide a basis for text study, since one of the central aspects of text-linguistics is the study of the ways in which sentences in a text are not independent, (i.e how they combine together to create a textual unit (or unity)). This limitation makes it impossible to investigate the kind of relations which must be postulated as existing between sentences in order to deal with the meaning of such things as conjunctions.

Chomsky (1957) makes this kind of limitation stronger by defining the sentence as the highest distinct element of the kind of grammar that can be constructed as a formal system; he argues that the fundamental task of language is to formulate or discover the rules of grammar. Chomsky also preserves Bloomfield's focus on the sentence particularly when he defines the aim of grammar as providing an account for all the sentences of a language. He argues, theoretically, that as far as linguistics is concerned, there are no existing relationships beyond the sentence. Chomsky (1968) argues that the primary goal of the linguistic investigation of a particular language is to discover the grammar of that language. Unlike Halliday (1973), Chomsky maintains that his main concern is the production of adequate grammatical rules, not the study of the social aspect of language or the interaction between the linguistic and metalinguistic aspects of language. Metalinguistics (c.f. Crystal 1969), refers to the overall
relation of the linguistic system to the other systems of behaviour in the associated culture. This notion is similar to other notions such as that of relation to context of situation (Firth 1951, 1957).

This is not in fact a criticism of Chomsky nor of Bloomfield for not expanding their studies so as to be able to deal with what goes beyond the sentence. It is reasonable to suggest that Bloomfield at least restricted himself to the sentence not only because of the enormity of the subject-matter of discourse, but also as Bloomfield rightly wrote at that time the best thing to do was to stick to the sentence in order to get a grasp on certain aspects such as 'word structure', and to permit a thorough dichotomy of patterns within sentences and phrases. Chomsky, in the same way, restricted himself to the sentence in order to maintain the consequences of his ideas about the formalization of grammar. Above all, the scope and the aims of Chomsky's or Bloomfield's linguistics are different from those of discourse analysis.

Along these lines, Kelkar (1970) points out that the relationships that are involved once we go beyond the sentence are different from those that operate within sentences. This means that dealing with stretches of discourse larger than the sentence loosens our linguistic investigation by amplifying the meaning involved and this makes discourse difficult to study, as language will be "less convention-ridden" than the sentence. Kelkar says:
"The stringing together of sentences into larger units of discourse such as the paragraph affords even more plentiful opportunities for freedom, as language is less convention-ridden here than within the bounds of a sentence."

Kelkar (1970: 73)

Having considered reasons for the exclusion of discourse from linguistics by a number of linguistic schools, I now turn to the approaches of other linguists who have attempted to include discourse within their overall linguistic model. These approaches are outlined below.

1.2.1 Harris' approach

Harris believes that discourse can be studied in terms of sentences. Harris starts his study of discourse by pointing out that language does not occur in isolated words; it doesn't occur in fragmentary sentences, but rather in connected discourse. In his own words, Harris says:

"This restriction to connected discourse does not detract from the usefulness of the analysis, since all language occurrences are internally connected. Language does not occur in stray words or sentences, but in connected discourse."

(Harris 1952:3; 1964: 357)

Harris goes on to demonstrate that this connection can be described in terms of the recurrence of what he calls equivalent
chains or morphemes. His main concern is to establish equivalent classes using information within the text. Harris establishes these equivalent classes by investigating the grammatical environment in which chains or morphemes occur.

Furthermore, Harris attempts to establish formal patterns without reference to meaning. He believes that his analysis reflects the way discourse is understood and this, according to him, contributes to studies of contextualized language, particularly when he argues that discourse can be approached from two angles: first, continuing descriptive linguistics beyond the limits of a single sentence, and second, correlating 'culture' and 'language'. In Harris's words:

"One can approach discourse analysis from two types of problem, which turn out to be related. The first is the problem of continuing descriptive linguistics beyond the limits of a single sentence at a time. The other is the question of correlating 'culture' and language (i.e. non-linguistic and linguistic behaviour)."

(Harris 1952: 1)

The analysis Harris proposes, in terms of distribution of morpheme sequence, provides the core for correlating the formal properties of dissimilar stretches of language with the social situations in which they occur. Harris (ibid: 3) expresses this belief by saying that distributional analysis, within a single sentence, yields information about certain correlations of language with other behaviours. The reason is that each
connected discourse occurs within a particular situation—whether of a person speaking of a conversation or of someone sitting down occasionally over a period of months to write a particular kind of book in a particular kind of literary or scientific tradition. To be sure, Harris argues, this correlation between situation and discourse does not mean that discourse occurring in similar situations must necessarily have certain formal similarities. The correlation between situation and discourse only makes it understandable or possible that such a formal correlation should exist.

Harris goes on to say that it remains to be seen, as a matter of empirical fact, whether such formal correlations do indeed exist. That is, whether the discourses of a particular person, social groups, style, or subject-matter exhibit not only particular meanings (in their selection or morphemes), but also characteristic formal characteristics. The particular selection or morphemes cannot be considered here. But the formal characteristics of a particular discourse (e.g. of politics, religion, etc.) can be studied by distributional methods within the text, and the fact of their correlation with a particular type of situation gives a meaning-status to the occurrences of these formal characteristics. Thus, the correlation between patterns of linguistic forms and the situations that analysts set up is a clear reflection of Harris' main concern.

Furthermore, Harris is interested in the patterns of the linguistic elements; these linguistic elements are formed into sentences which are themselves parts of a larger structure. In
fact, Harris's concern is not only with spoken discourse, but also with written discourse as well.

1.2.2 The work of Winter

Winter pursues the idea of using grammatical questions as a means of teaching students to write reports. Winter classifies grammatical questions into two categories. The first category is called 'starting questions' (e.g. What have you found?), which define the type of discourse to be produced. The second category is called 'continuation questions', (e.g. (I have found) your lost bag) whose purpose is to flesh out the material given by the starting questions. Here, the 'continuation questions' come as an answer to the 'starting questions'.

Although Winter's main aim is to help students write reports, he stresses the fact that the 'question-answer technique' is also one of the most important means of analyzing discourses from a more theoretical point of view. In fact, in some of his writings (1974, 1977, 1979), Winter indicates that these techniques are important in the process of understanding and even analyzing discourse.

According to Winter, the use of questions helps explain the relations that exist between a sentence and its context. However, one of the shortcomings of Winter's work is that he does not apply his work to explicate entire discourses, nor does he explain in a formal manner how the question-answer technique can be made to explain or identify the various types of clause.
relations. This notion will be scrutinized in more detail later on in Chapters (4) and (5).

For the analysis of sentences, Winter (1977, 1979) maintains that questions should be considered the most effective technique for analyzing the connection between sentences. Winter attempts to relate this technique to the role of repetition in determining the type of relationship pertaining between sentences.

Winter devotes most of his study to the meta language of English. In his article (1977), Winter demonstrates that the relationships between clauses can be signalled in one of three ways. First, they can be signalled by subordinators (Winter calls this vocabulary 1). Second, they can be signalled by sentence connectors (he calls this vocabulary 2). Third, they can be signalled by lexical items (he calls this vocabulary 3). Winter shows how items from all these three vocabularies paraphrase each other and he illustrates this phenomenon by saying that 'by-ing', 'thus' and 'instrumental' can be used to indicate the logical sequence relation of instrument. To explain this, Winter uses the following examples:

(1) By appealing to scientists and technologists to support his party, Mr. Wilson won many middle class votes in the election.

(2) Mr. Wilson appealed to scientists and technologists to support his party. He thus won many middle class votes in the election.
(3) Mr. Wilson's appeals to scientists and technologists to support his party were instrumental in winning many middle class votes in the election.

[The above three examples are taken from Winter, 1977].

The difference between these possibilities, Winter argues, does not derive from the relations they depict, but rather from the contexts in which they occur. In other words, context is what makes us anticipate or predict what may come next, and therefore, it is important for clause relations. Winter suggests that since vocabularies [1] and [2] are considered 'closed systems', then, vocabulary [3] paraphrases must share common characteristics or at least have something in common with these closed-system characteristics. Winter demonstrates how these closed system vocabulary [3] items function and how they may be identified.

The approach Winter adopts to the analysis of discourse is based on the idea that the moment we place two sentences together or adjacent to each other, these two sentences enter into a relation with each other, so that the understanding of one sentence, in one way or another, depends on the understanding of the other. This kind of understanding, Winter suggests, forms the contextual significance of the two sentences. The contextual significance, Winter argues, is what is called the 'clause relation'. Winter says:
"When we talk about a clause relation, we are talking about the cognitive processes of the mind which come into operation the moment any two sentences or membership of sentences are placed together for the purpose of communicating meaningfully with the hearer or reader. The function of this particular joint cognitive process is to understand what these two members mean in terms of each other within a given context. I call this cognitive function the clause-relating function.

(Winter 1977: 4-5)

Winter postulates two ways of interpreting one sentence in the light of another. The first one is through what is called the Matching Relation, and the second is when we observe a change in physical or conceptual time or space (i.e. Logical Sequence Relation). In the first case, we match things, actions, people, etc, for 'same' and 'different', and one of the characteristics of this relation is 'compare'. In the 'same' relation, a comparison is made between two things or events in terms of some particular in respect of which they are similar. The example 'Adam was afraid and so was Amy'* is a case in point. In this relation, there is something in common between 'Adam' and 'Amy'. As for the 'different' relation, a comparison is made between two things or events in terms of some particular in respect of which they are different. The example 'Adam is an American; Amy a Jordanian'* illustrates this point (* The examples are my own).

To further his study, Winter postulates two types of relations: first, the comparative affirmation relation as "what is true of X is also true of Y ", and comparative denial relation
as in "what is true of X is not true of Y". As for the logical sequence relations, Winter points out that time is very important to the interpretation of a clause, and given one sentence with its preceding context, the relation would actually be predictable.

As pointed out earlier (pp. 25-26), Winter's three vocabularies are of considerable importance for identifying the structure of texts. Therefore, one needs to illustrate what is meant by these vocabularies, along with their signalling devices. The vocabularies Winter postulates are subordinators, which he calls vocabulary [1] (e.g. besides, before, after, because, etc.), sentence connectors, which he calls vocabulary [2] (e.g. also, at least, for example, in contrast, etc.), and finally the lexical item relation, which he calls vocabulary [3] (e.g. achieve, result, different, compare, etc.). Vocabulary [3] is seen to be the most important relation as it is concerned with the lexical realization of clause relations. This type of vocabulary behaves either as nouns, verbs, adjectives, etc., as well as the complement of the clause. In view of the fact that these items behave in this way, they are called 'open set items', although they may of course paraphrase 'closed set items'. (For the criteria of vocabulary [3] closed system, see Winter 1977: 27-57).

Winter argues that beyond the sentence, there is a relationship holding between two elements which, by their very nature, form a pair, and the constituent of each one of these elements ranges from a nominal group to more than one sentence.
These relations are rule-governed and predictable. What allows us to communicate with each other is the fact that we share the same meaning when we interpret sentences in their contexts on the same principles. Thus, the three vocabularies are means of making meaning explicable, particularly vocabulary [3] whose main function lies in the analysis of connected texts.

1.2.3 Longacre's approach

Another linguist whose work is most significant in the area of discourse analysis is Longacre. His work investigates the grammatical structures of narrative discourse. Longacre attempts to summarize the results of two field workshops conducted on the Philippine's languages in terms of their phonological and grammatical structures. This kind of research is based upon the notion of hierarchical levels, and, as he notes, is not done by many linguists.

In terms of hierarchical organization, Longacre postulates three different hierarchical levels: 'discourse', 'paragraph', and 'sentence'. Longacre argues that, within this hierarchy, the sentence is regarded as the domain of clause combination. Above the sentence, the two levels of 'paragraph' and 'discourse' have a grammatical structure; discourse has structural units (i.e. aperture, stage, episode, etc.) and 'paragraph' has a topic and sentences that are interrelated (see also pp. 31-32). The distinction between paragraph and discourse is not always clear. However, 'paragraph' refers to a distinct part of 'discourse' or
a collection of sentences that are established around a topic in which these sentences are connected and interrelated, and the topic, in its turn, has a unity of function.

Longacre's (1968) work on the Philippine languages is carried out within a tagmemic framework. He posits four contrasting discourse genres: Narrative, Procedural, Exposition, and Hortatory. These four discourse genres may be most simply characterized as follows:

1. Narrative discourse recounts some sort of story.
2. Expository discourse expounds a subject or explains something.
3. Procedural discourse tells how to do things.
4. Hortatory discourse attempts to influence or change the conduct, beliefs, and attitudes of someone.

Although the detailed presentation and illustration of these discourse genres will come later in Chapter (2), it should be emphasized that Longacre's major contribution to the study of discourse is in terms of the demarcation of the boundaries of text. Working within a tagmemic framework, Longacre presents functional slots that underlie the essential components of text; these components are made explainable by either the 'paragraph' or the 'embedded discourse'. The relationships that hold between these essential components outline the significant exponent of Longacre's contribution to discourse.

In analyzing discourse, Longacre (1978) notes that discourse analysts have different goals from discourse writers. He argues
that this observation can be investigated in terms of the analyst's and the writer's task. Longacre demonstrates that the procedures used by discourse analysts are different from those of discourse writers. He suggests that the task of discourse writers should not be neglected; it is to flesh out from the abstract of his/her discourse its complete and solid structure with all its indispensable detail and background. That is, the writer begins with a backbone, as a base for his analysis, expands it to a skeleton, then puts flesh and skin on it. The task of the discourse analyst is the other way around; he looks through the flesh and the skin to the skeleton and studies the structures beneath it; consequently, he perceives the fundamental nature of the whole. Longacre states:

"The fundamental task of the author of discourse should not be lost sight of: to flesh out from the abstract of his discourse its full-bodied structure with all its necessary detail and background."

Longacre continues:

"You might say he starts with a back-bone, expands it to a skeleton, and then puts flesh and skin on it. The job of the analyst is to go at this in reverse, to look through the flesh and the skin to the skeletal structure beneath and perceive the fundamental nature of the whole."

Longacre, cited in (Dressler 1978: 105)
Within the structure of discourse, Longacre (1974c, 1978) posits two sections designated as 'aperture' and 'stage'. He argues that 'aperture' includes only formulaic phrases or sentences used to open a narrative. For example, the term 'once upon a time' represents the 'aperture', and the remaining information is part of the 'stage'. This model describes formulaic beginnings and endings along with a series of incidents, usually sequences of events and actions called 'episodes'; each episode is relatively unified, having a discernable beginning and end. Longacre explains, such grammatical structures, (i.e. episodes, occur before and after the story's climax).

Within this model, Longacre recognizes an optional 'finis' which is identified as a formuliac phrase such as 'the end' or a sentence like 'That is all, ladies and gentlemen'. All the above terms are dealt with as functional slots which describe tagmemes.

In his study of the Philippine's languages, Longacre (1968) argues that this structure is found in almost all the languages of the world and is therefore 'universal'. Longacre postulates other kinds of structure of narrative which cannot be wholly explained in this limited space. Here, it is sufficient to point out that there is a fundamental slot to be found in discourse termed as 'closure' which preceeds the 'end'; sometimes 'closure' is referred to as 'finis'. Also, there is another slot named the 'wrap up' phrase which brings the story to some sort of an end. For more detailed analysis on this subject, see Longacre (1968, 1978) and Brend (1974: 357-377).
1.2.4 De Beaugrande & Dressler's approach

De Beaugrande & Dressler's contribution to the study of discourse focuses on the areas of textuality and intertextuality within the text. That is, texts are seen as the actual instances of communication; they are manifestation of language. As such, they occur in a context. They also presuppose other texts.

De Beaugrande (1984) and De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981) argue that textuality has to rely on some basic standards; these are hypothesized as cohesion, coherence, intentionality, acceptability, situationality, intertextuality, and informativity. De Beaugrande & Dressler believe that the textuality of any text or discourse is a function of the interaction of these elements.

Before we move any further, we need to illustrate briefly these seven standards and see whether they are conducive to effective and informative communication.

To begin with, the first standard of textuality is that of cohesion. According to De Beaugrande & Dressler, cohesion refers to the formal surface syntactic and semantic signals that conjoin sentences or any stretches of language within a text; it expresses the fact that the successive elements hang together without any interruption. For Halliday, this definition, while not false, is not sufficient. According to Halliday & Hasan (1976), cohesion is shown and indicated in the ties that exist within text; these cohesive ties, also according to De Beaugrande
& Dressler, exist between a presupposed item and a presupposing one. In the example 'wash and core six apples. Put them into a fireproof dish', Halliday & Hasan argue that cohesion is displayed through one of the cohesive devices. They point out that it is clear that the term 'them' in the second sentence has the same reference as the 'six cooking apples' in the first sentence. This anaphoric function gives cohesion to the two sentences.

Halliday & Hasan present a taxonomy of these various types of cohesive ties under four main types: (1) reference, including these various pronoun-like forms such as 'one', 'so', 'do', etc., and (2) several kinds of ellipsis; (3) conjunction, referring to words such as 'and', 'yet', 'but', etc., and (4) lexical cohesion, which has to do with the repeated occurrences of the same or related lexical items. All these lexico-grammatical devices make the text hang together and give it cohesion. However, De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981) argue that these lexico-grammatical devices, while extremely important, are not sufficient to make a text achieve cohesion.

Like Widdowson (1973) and Brown & Yule (1983), De Beaugrande & Dressler approach texts from a pragmatic point of view. What is important to them is the underlying structure of texts and how these texts are internally coherent. This contrasts with the position of Halliday & Hasan, who believe that surface elements (i.e. ties) guarantee cohesion. However, in Hasan's later work, (see Hasan 1979), Hasan, like De Beaugrande & Dressler, seems to
be aware of the fact that these surface elements will not always guarantee the cohesion of texts.

The second standard of textual competence is called **coherence**. The term refers to the underlying relations between propositions. According to De Beaugrande, a proposition can be defined as two concepts plus a relationship obtaining between them (e.g. one event is the 'cause' of another) (c.f. De Beaugrande 1984: 38). If an addressee can make logical sense of the text, this is because he can apprehend its coherence. Coherence subsumes the procedures whereby elements of knowledge are activated in such a way that their conceptual connectivity is maintained and made recoverable. The means of coherence includes logical relations such as causality and class inclusion; knowledge of how events, actions, objects, and situations are organized; and the striving for continuity in human experience.

Widdowson (1978:45) points out that coherence is "measured by the extent to which a particular instance of language use corresponds to a shared knowledge of conventions as to how illocutionary acts are related to form larger units of discourse of different kinds, whereas cohesion is the overt relationship between propositions expressed through sentences".

From a different angle, De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981: 3) talk of cohesion in terms of the components of the surface text which are mutually connected within a sequence, and of coherence as the configuration of concepts. What is meant by concept is a configuration of knowledge characteristically stored and activated together (De Beaugrande 1984: 38).

35
The third standard of textual coherence is that of\textit{intentionality}. The term refers to the text producer's attitude that a given language configuration is intended to be a cohesive and coherent text; and that such a text is an instrument*. De Beaugrande (1980: 20) suggests that there is a variable range of tolerance where intentionality remains in effect even when the full standards of cohesion and coherence are not met. Similarly, Hartmann (1980) maintains that intentionality relates to the wish of the text-producer to give the message a proper shape.

The fourth standard of textuality can be stated from the text's receiver's point of view. This is \textit{acceptability}. According to De Beaugrande & Dressier (1981), De Beaugrande (1980), acceptability subsumes the text receiver's attitudes that a language configuration should be accepted as a cohesive and a coherent text. Acceptability, they suggest, has also a tolerance range for cases where context brings disturbances, or where the receiver does not share the producer's goals. De Beaugrande (1984) argues that both intentionality and acceptability have a threshold of tolerance that can apply when the standards of cohesion and coherence are not fully maintained. Plans and goals

* An instrument being a non-intentional object which provides the means for some event or action (e.g. 'fuel -propulsion; scissors-cut'). Instruments therefore differ from agents in lacking intention, and from causes and enablements in that instruments are objects, while causes and enablements are events (for details see De Beaugrande 1980: 82-83). Instruments in following a plan are sets of steps intended to lead to a goal. A goal is a state of the world whose attainment is envisaged (and usually derived) by the planning agent (c.f. De Beaugrande 1984, III 2.6)
make a text useable and understandable, even if it would seem disordered or meaningless in isolation. Relevance determines what possible meanings deserve consideration.

The fifth standard of textuality is the standard of **situationality**. This term subsumes the factors that make a text relevant to a current or recoverable situation. The text figures as an action that can both monitor and change a situation. De Beaugrande & Dressier point out that situationality always implies the role of at least two communicative participants, but they may not be the focus of attention as persons. In a similar vein, Hartmann (1980) states that situationality is relevance to a communicative context. This standard also, as the others, requires interaction with the other standards, and there would be a match between the linguistic data (objects) and the situation. Otherwise communication will be blocked by such factors owing to the fact that the element 'situation' and the 'communicative context' are not relevant and therefore mismatched.

De Beaugrande & Dressler argue that any given message should be pertinent to the situation. They also argue that a text will be relevant to a real or recoverable situation. Situationality is an important standard that tends to merge with all other standards of textuality. This standard is also closely related to the sixth standard of textuality, and that is **intertextuality**. This term subsumes the ways in which the text presupposes knowledge of other texts. De Beaugrande argues that when the text is remote from others in time or topic, this will lead to some kind of a breakdown in communication. Intertextuality
includes the relationships between a given text and other relevant texts encountered in prior experience. Hartmann elaborates on this standard by saying that intertextuality refers to the fact that most texts have to fit in the conventions of the genre of which they are a part. Lemke (1983, 1985) claims, for his part, that intertextuality is expressed in the fact that every text or occasion of discourse produces its social meanings against the background of other texts and discourses circulating in a community. He points out that meanings can be made from text to text through the relations between their discourse structures and rhetorical devices, through the conventional social relations of the action and events constituted in part by the texts, and through the systems of relations of the thematic-ideational fields of the 'contents' of the texts.

Halliday & Hasan (1985) look at intertextuality in a way similar to that of De Beaugrande and others, but from another perspective. They argue that the context of situation and the context of culture are determinants of the text. Therefore, text, in general, may thus be predictable from context. This is an important perspective, since it helps us understand how people actually exchange meaning and interact with one another. However, Halliday stresses the fact that the relationship between text and context is a dialectical one. This means, according to him, that the text creates the context as much the context creates the text. Halliday says:
"Meaning arises from the friction between the two."

Halliday & Hasan (1985: 47)

This means that part of the environment for any text is a set of previous texts, texts that are taken for granted as shared among those taking part. Halliday illustrates that by saying that the school provides very clear examples of this aspect. Thus, every lesson is built on the assumption of earlier lessons in which topics have been explored and concepts have been agreed upon and defined. Halliday also believes that there is a great deal of unspoken cross-reference of which everyone is largely unaware.

The final standard of textuality is informativity. Informativity is the extent to which text events are uncertain, new, or surprising. One might say that some stretches of language are more informative than others even though fewer words are used; this is due to the fact that these words convey a more accurate and exact meaning. Informativity does not depend on the number of words used; rather, it depends on how informative these words are and the degree and precision of meaning they convey. De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981), De Beaugrande (1984) suggest that events that are presented in the text might be classified as expected or unexpected. Also, they may be unknown or certain. Hartmann points out that the more circularity in the presentation of a message is avoided the more informative that message will be.
De Beaugrande & Dressler argue that these standards are not new, but their treatment has been sporadic and diffuse. Cohesion and coherence have been conflated due perhaps to the widespread confusion regarding the nature of the sentence (c.f. Widdowson 1973).

One might meditate for a moment and say: why should these standards of textual competence be of interest to the discourse analyst and how they are related to this thesis? The answer to this question is that they enhance our intuitive grasp of language in particular contexts; they bring into focus characteristics of language that have been neglected for a long time, and help us to understand and relate the pragmatic aspect of language to the real world in a way that helps us in the description of our actual editorial text-forms.

1.3 Summary

The previous sections have illustrated the main reasons why linguists study discourse or shy away from the study of discourse; they have also made a critical comparison between

The notions of cohesion and coherence can be pursued in the works of Halliday & Hasan (1976); Hasan (1968); Grimes (1975); and Bellert (1970). On intentionality, see Van Dijk (1977) and De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981). On acceptability, one may look at the work of Greenbaum (1977) and on situationality, see Halliday (1977). For some perspectives on intertextuality, one can consider the work of Quirk (1978); Lemke (1985). On informativity, little is available except, as De Beaugrande (1980) points out, on 'given' and 'new' knowledge in sentences (c.f. Grimes 1975).
different approaches to the notions of 'text' and 'discourse'.
This study is presented to explain some theoretical issues
relevant to text structure.

It is clear that the notions of 'text' and 'discourse' are,
theoretically speaking, defined in many different ways (see pp.
11-17). As for these notions, they will be treated differently.
The notion of 'text' will be treated from now on as a semantic
unit; it is a unit of meaning which is realized by
lexicogrammatical units. The creation of this semantic unit, as
the actualization of meaning potential, is influenced by
situational parameters such as field, mode, and tenor. As for
the notion of 'discourse', it will be treated here as a
semiotactic unit (Hodge & Kress 1988); it is the social process
(i.e. actions, signs, etc.) by which meaning is manifested. It is
the social process by which people interchange, as of ideas, and
express themselves in such a way that they can clearly understand
each other. This social process makes up the whole culture.
This is what Kress & Hodge call the social process by which
meaning is constructed and exchanged. I have adopted this notion
of 'discourse' because this study is not only concerned with the
surface structure of texts, but also with the underlying
structure as well, in which the description of the encoder's as
well as the decoder's perception of the message has a key role in
the analysis and the manifestations of meaning.
CHAPTER 2
DISCOURSE, TEXT-TYPE AND TRANSLATION

2.0 Introduction

In the previous chapter, I have studied two notions: the notion of text and the notion of discourse. The main purpose of this study was to bring out the differences as well as the similarities between these two notions. These two notions are included in this thesis because of their contribution to my understanding of some theoretical issues relevant to text-structure. In this chapter, an attempt will be made to investigate the interrelation between discourse, text-types, and translation, a step necessary in order to show how my corpus interrelates to the overall structure of this thesis. To this effect, this chapter is divided into six sections. Section (2.1) investigates the correlation between discourse and translation; this will be shown clearly through investigating the connection between translation and meaning and translation and culture. The section provides a brief account of translation as has been advocated in the past as well as in the present. Section (2.2) makes a critical comparison between three approaches to text-type: De Beaugrande & Dressler’s (1981); Werlich’s (1983); and Hatim’s (1983, 1984); it establishes the similarities as well as the differences between these approaches. This section will also
provide insights into how the components of a particular text-type may help the translator as well as the interpreter to comprehend a text. These aspects will be shown in the way text-linguists look at the process of text-categorization and what distinguishing characteristics are involved within such a process.

Sections (2.3) and (2.4) present Longacre's (1976, 1983) discourse genres. These two sections show the parameters (limiting characteristics) of these genres and identify their main constituents (e.g. + Tension). They also show how these parameters are significant for the categorization of text-types.

Section (2.5) provides an account of Beekman & Callow's (1979, 1988) approach to discourse; it also illuminates the process in which one can differentiate between a discourse type and another.

Although the last two sections (i.e. 2.3 and 2.4) may not serve our purpose in dealing with clause relations, they are included here because of the way these discourse types define our argumentative discourse and then highlight the main characteristics of these argumentative texts-forms (i.e. editorials). These two sections are followed by Section (2.6) whose main function is to summarize the main points and also present other clarifications that may prove to be helpful in understanding ideas and notions presented throughout this chapter. These sections are presented below.
2.1 Discourse and translation

Since discourse is defined as a social phenomenon by which meaning is communicated and constructed (Section 1.1, pp. 11-15), it follows that discourse relies heavily on the domain of sociolinguistics (i.e. the study of language in relation to society (Lyons 1981; Hudson 1980)). The interrelation between discourse and translation is evident in the fact that translation involves the social function of discourse within a society, and with reference to its context of situation, the speaker's role in constructing a text, (i.e. his intentionality), and its contextual configurations, (i.e. field, mode, and tenor), all of which make up the social reality of the text. These elements are unequivocally important components for translation. Translation is not a mediation between two languages; it is not the use of one language to convey a message whose form and content were originally directed to different language users (Neubert 1985). Rather, it is the construction of the social reality, the linguistic and rhetorical patterns of thought that suit the target language and the community in which language is used.

The history of translation, past and present, has many examples indicative of triumph and failure in terms of the way translation should be carried out. These examples reflect, in a way, the gap between the original and the target text. It is the talented translator who is unequivocally aware of the importance of bridging, as much as possible, between the source and the target texts. This involves the speaker's intentionality, text
function with reference to its semiotic components (i.e. the social and cultural), and the context of situation. All these pragmatic, semiotic, and contextual elements may bridge the gap between the source text and the target text. These context specifications will be clarified later in Section (2.2) below.

However, before we go any further and investigate the nature as well as the significance of these contextual variables, (i.e. pragmatics, semiotics and communicative dimensions (see Section 2.2 and Chapter 7 ), an attempt will be made to provide a brief account of the history as well as the nature of translation. This aspect is investigated below.

2.1.1 Translation: past and present

Despite the large amount of literature that has been produced on the process or theory of translation, it can be said that most of this literature has been reiterated from one generation to another (Lozano, 1975). There is of course a considerable variation as far as speculating on this process; this variation has made a small, but useful, contribution to the attempt of identifying the theoretical frameworks for doing such translation. In some respect, there is very little consensus among linguists, translation theorists, and translation practitioners regarding the principles, rules, and methods of translating. The best indication of such disparity of views is the fact that translation has many definitions. This reflects the fact that it involves many DIFFERENT strategies. The
following definitions are a case in point. However, for the sake of clarity, it should be pointed out that these definitions, roughly speaking, will be classified into meaning-based definitions such as Nida & Taber (1969), Nida (1964a), Rabin (1958), Ross (1981), Firth (1968), Catford (1965), Newmark (1981, 1988), and semiotic-based definitions such as Forster (1958), Jakobson (1959), Steiner (1975), Frawley (1984), etc. Meaning-based definitions are those which take meaning as the base for interpreting and then conveying the meaning of the original text into that of the target. Here, meaning necessitates reference to linguistic characteristics such as lexical, grammatical, phonological, etc; it also necessitates reference to non-linguistic characteristics such as thought, situation, knowledge, intentions, and use. Semiotic-based definitions, on the other hand, are those definitions which take translation as the study of signs, symbols, codes, etc. Within this semiotic approach, the cultural, social, rhetorical, and communicative patterns of human behaviours are studied. Also all aspects of human communication are analyzed as systems of signals, they are the means which semioticians use for the interpretation and analysis of texts. The interrelation of these definitions is illustrated in the following section. The letter (M) stands for meaning based definitions, (S) stands for semiotic based definitions, and (S or M) stands for either one.

1. "Translation is the reproduction in the receptor language of the closest natural equivalent of the source language message, first in terms of meaning, and second in terms of style." (M)

Nida & Taber (1969: 210)
2. "Translation is the interpretation of verbal signs in one language by means of verbal signs in another." (S) 

Steiner (1975: 414)

3. "Translation is a process by which a spoken or written utterance takes place in one language which is intended and presumed to convey the same meaning as a previously existing utterance in another language. It thus involves two distinct factors, a 'meaning', or reference to some slice of reality." (M) 

Rabin (1958: 123)

4. (1) "Translation is the transference of the content of a text from one language into another, bearing in mind that we can not always dissociate the content from form. 

(2) It might perhaps be best to consider translation as a conversion of symbols rather than a transference of meaning." (S) 

Forster (1958: 1)

5. "Translation is the replacement of textual material in one language (SL) by equivalent textual material in another (TL)." (M) 

Catford (1965: 20)

6. "Translation, the surmounting of the obstacle, is made possible by an equivalence of thought which lies behind the different verbal expressions of thought." (M) 

Savory (1957: 11)

7. "(1) Intralingual translation or rewording is an interpretation of verbal signs by means of other signs of the same language. 

(2) Interlingual translation or translation proper is an interpretation of verbal signs by means of some other languages."
(3) Intersemiotic translation or transmutation is an interpretation of verbal signs by means of signs of nonverbal sign systems." (S)

Jakobson (1959: 233)

8. "Translation means recodification." (S)

Frawley (1984: 159)

9. "The basis for any total translation must be found in the linguistic analysis at (the grammatical, lexical, collocational, and situational levels." (M)

Firth (1968: 76)

10. "Translation should not be studied as a comparing and contrasting of two texts, but as a process of interaction between author, translator, and the reader of the translation." (S or M)

De Beaugrande (1978: 13)

11. "(1) Translation should give a complete transcript of the ideas of the original work.

(2) The style and manner of writing should be the same character with that of the original.

(3) Translation should have all the ease of the original composition." (M)

Tytler (1912: 9)

12. "Translation is rendering the meaning of a text into another language in the way that the author intended the text." (M)

Newmark (1988: 5)
13. "The most natural view is that translation preserves the meaning of the original in another language or form. Translation is not restatement, where differences are minimized, but, highlights certain equivalence in the context of important dissimilarities." (M) Ross (1981: 9)

14. "Translation will be understood as the final product of problem-solving and sign production of a receptor-text (RT) functionally equivalent to a source text (ST), performed by a human being in a given language for a given group of text receivers." (S) Diaz-Diocaretz (1985: 9)

In fact, there are many other definitions and principles that give more or less the same information, and a full account of the these definitions as well as their shortcomings is beyond the scope of this thesis. However, the existence of these various definitions suggests that translation is far from having a generally accepted theoretical framework. What is also clear is that different translation theorists have concentrated on different types and strategies of translation. For example, there are strategies or theories that are mainly concerned with translation in a 'literal sense' (Rabin, 1958; Vachon-Spilka 1968). These theories demand word-for-word translation. Other theories, on the other hand, are mainly concerned with the reproduction of equivalent lexical items of the original text (Nida, 1964a; Nida & Taber, 1969). Different attempts have been made to look at translation from a pragmatic and semiotic view in which the essence of translation is treated as an interaction.
between text-producer and the message along with the social and cultural contexts in which a particular piece of language is used (Jakobson 1959; Forster 1958; De Beaugrande 1978; Mason 1982; Wilss 1982: 135; and Hatim 1987). What is meant by pragmatic here is the study of purposes for which the texts are used; it is the intentionality behind all the choices made (Newmark 1988). This includes the text-producer's intentions and the intended function of the text. As for Semiotics, it is the interaction of various elements in the text as signs; it includes here the social, cultural and psychological reality of a particular community. In this component, the social, cultural, and the anthropological characteristics of text are brought together to assess its meaning. The interaction of these signs with one another creates the semiotic meaning of a text. For more information on these components, see Section 2.2 pp. 63-66.

Although these context specifications illuminate the intentions of the text-producer and shed some light on the semiotic contexts in which the text is used, there is still some kind of uncertainty as to what constitutes these particular contexts. That is, it is very hard to make always accurate and complete predictions about the intentions of the text-producer. Even Halliday (1985a: 345) seems sceptical of the possibility of studying the HOW and the WHY choices made by the text-producer. Also, it could be argued that there are some choices that are easily decoded by the writer and can therefore be more easily interpreted than others. All that we do is in fact speculate / make predictions on his communicative intent through the
structure of the text. These contexts do in fact facilitate translation but do not make it adequate in all respects, because understanding the pragmatic and semiotic meaning of a text is not an easy task, since this involves more than changing the words of the original into that of the target.

While the translator tends to ignore the function and style in a word-for-word translation, in a sense translation (i.e. one in which the translator relies on how the text feels by using his own senses), there is an imitation of the source text, in terms of its function, style, semiotic and pragmatic values. By the same token, there is a tendency to stress on the aesthetic criteria of the target text.

The above discussion is only brief. However, most writers on translation emphasize the importance of language within its own cultural context, as the meaning of words or lexical items is rooted in their text-producer's intentionality and within his own culture. Lado (1957) argues that learning the structure of a language involves learning its culture. One cannot really understand a foreign language without taking into account the culture of which it is a part. This is why translating any text from one language into another yields a particular kind of ambiguity which cannot be clarified unless the intentions of the text-producer within his own social, cultural, denotative, connotative, and rhetorical contexts have been accounted for.

Because of the fact that the notion of language and its relation to linguistic and extralinguistic characteristics have been debated by many linguists, philosophers, anthropologists,
and discourse analysts, an attempt will be made here to examine two important characteristics that have a significant role in the process of translation. These characteristics, although briefly hinted at earlier, are presented in the subsequent sections.

2.1.2 Translation and meaning

Because of the fact that the connection between translation and meaning is very obvious, there is no need to go for any great elaboration. However, it should be pointed out that translation attempts to uncover all the potentialities of meaning in the two languages concerned. To this effect, meaning in all its linguistic and non-linguistic aspects has to be carefully considered in translation. As Dummett (1973) argues, to grasp the meaning of a word is to understand the context and the occurrence in which the word is used, and this requires understanding the function this particular word performs in language. Meaning revolves around the notion of how language functions, and such function is itself derived from all aspects of meaning. Translation aims at using all aspects of meaning in such a way that the source text and the target text are approximated to one another from all linguistic and non-linguistic aspects. Meaning in semantic or lexical terms has been thoroughly studied (Ogden & Richards (1923); Ullmann (1962); Lyons (1968, 1977, 1981) and Cruse (1986)), but it has been apparent at least since Ogden & Richards that semantic meaning cannot account for all aspects of meaning relevant to the
translator. For this reason, meaning in this study will be
treated as the totality of the information conveyed - not simply
that type of information which is treatable under a formal
semantic theory (e.g. of a truth-conditional nature). This is
so, because this study will not look at meaning as an abstract
entity but as an interaction between the translator and the text.
Meaning and/or function of the text is the interpretation of a
given message. This usage of meaning coincides with that of
(1978), and Mason (1982). Those views share the assumption that
meaning is understood as action and interaction; it is a process
and at the same time a product. The translator looks at meaning
as the intention of the text-producer in the social and cultural
environments in which the text is used. Here, Ogden & Richards
state that meaning is:

"That to which the interpreter of a symbol
(a) Refers.
(b) Believes himself to be referring
(c) Believes the User to be referring".

Ogden & Richards (1923: 187)

2.1.3 Translation and culture

It has been suggested that language is a reflection of
culture (Jakobson 1985). These two concepts are intrinsically
correlated and interconnected. As Jakobson (1985) argues that
"language is a cultural phenomenon", and culture according to him
is:
"The totality of behaviour patterns that are passed between generations by learning, socially determined behaviour learned by imitation and instruction."

Jakobson (1985: 103)

Jakobson goes on to say that learning a language involves learning social conventions simply because language has cognitive and expressive aspects that are cultivated. Similarly, Kaplan (1966, 1983) and Jakobson (1971) stress the fact that language affects our conceptualization of reality; they argue that the linguistic categories that form the way we think are different from one language to another. Jakobson says:

"Language is situated between nature and culture and it serves as a foundation of culture. We may go even further and state that language is THE [his emphasis] necessary and substantial foundation of human culture".

Jakobson (1985: 107)

In discussing the impact of culture upon language, Jakobson (1985), Sapir (1921, 1951 and 1956), Hymes (1964), and Whorf (1956) suggest that each language exists within a particular culture and has its own particular lexicon which shapes the perception of its speakers. Languages reflect cultural differences, and these differences are manifested in the categorization of gender, number and colour, etc.

Within the process of translation, the awareness of the cultural as well as the socially equivalent frameworks in which a particular text is used is extremely significant, although
perfect cultural equivalents are indeed unattainable. What is attainable is the approximation of cultural and social contexts of the two languages, which makes the translated text functionally similar and relatively natural with respect to its original. Regarding this, Malinowski states:

"Since the whole world of things to be expressed changes with the level of culture, with geographical, social and economic conditions, the consequence is that the meaning of a word must always be gathered, not from a passive contemplation of this word, but from an analysis of its function, with reference to a given culture".

Malinowski (1923: 309)

Nida shares this notion with Malinowski that any translation that excludes consideration of cultural elements is doomed to be inadequate. Nida says:

"The person who is engaged in translation from one language into another ought to be constantly aware of the contrast in the entire range of culture represented by the two languages."

Nida (1964b: 90)

These views indicate that the link between language and culture cannot be ignored, and that a community's culture consists of whatever it is one has to know or believe in order to operate in a manner acceptable to its members. This is what makes translation a difficult task as the translator has to be aware that the text he is translating is not only formed by a
linguistic capability but it also relates to things, people, cultural and social values, behaviours, and emotions. All these operate within the situational context of the text.

2.2 Text-types categorization

Having demonstrated the connection between discourse and translation, and that of translation, meaning and culture, an attempt will be made here to show how the categorization of texts into text-types give insights onto the main components of text. This, in turn, helps us interpret and then convey the text from one language into another. This process will be thoroughly investigated in Chapter (7) where an attempt will be made to study carefully the main components of our editorials and then show how these text-forms are translated. In what follow of this chapter, an attempt will be made to investigate the text-categorization process. This will show how text-linguists look at a particular text, and the criteria used for text-categorization.

2.2.1 A comparative approach to text-types

In the last decade or so, a considerable amount of material has been produced on methods of text-categorization (Longacre (1976, 1983); De Beaugrande (1980); De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981); Werlich (1983); Zydatiss (1983); Hatim (1983, 1984); and John (1988)). These approaches have not been studied and developed relatively independently of each other. Bearing this in
mind, this section is an attempt to compare three approaches: De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981); Werlich (1983); and Hatim (1984). Conclusions will be drawn and the similarities and differences will be noted.

The above mentioned approaches lead to similar categorizations and definitions of text-types (i.e. argumentative is that which furthers acceptance or evaluation of ideas and beliefs). However, they are different in the way they look at and approach text-types. This is to say that they are different in terms of how they focus on a particular text. For example, De Beaugrande & Dressler's model is different from that of Werlich's (1983) in that De Beaugrande & Dressler differentiate text-types along 'functional lines'. Text-types are supposed to perform specific and intended functions and in so doing contribute to the process of human and social communication. De Beaugrande & Dressler adopt this analysis because they look at text-types as a linguistic product, whereas Werlich looks at text-types as a linguistic process occurring in the communicant's mind (i.e. judging, planning, comprehension, etc.).

In distinguishing between 'text' and 'non-text', Werlich takes the variables 'completion' and 'coherence' as the main determining factors. He believes that the categorization of texts, which is unequivocally significant for the translator, is mainly concerned with their underlying structures and how these connect or relate to specific contextual factors. In identifying a particular text, Werlich (1983: 21) believes that "texts distinctively correlate with contextual factors in a
communication situation". That is, texts focus attention on specific circumstances from the total set of factors. As a result, texts can be grouped together and classified on the basis of their dominant contextual focus. Such groupings are hypothesized in terms of the following five dominant contextual foci:

1. When the focus is on 'factual phenomena' such as persons, objects, and relations in the spatial context, texts are called **Descriptive**.

2. When the focus is on 'factual' and 'conceptual' phenomena in the temporal context, texts are called **Narrative**.

3. When the focus is on 'de-composition' (analysis) into constituent elements or 'composition' (synthesis) from constituent elements of concepts, texts are called **Expository**.

4. When the focus is on 'relations between concepts', texts are called **Argumentative**.

5. When the focus is on the 'formation of future behaviour', texts are called **Instructive**.

Unlike De Beaugrande, Werlich maintains that contextual factors are not sufficient to determine text-types. Werlich
believes that contextual factors and innate biological properties should be correlated for such a classification. Werlich says:

"Texts do not only correlate distinctively with specific contextual factors but also appear to correlate with innate biological properties of the communicant's mind."

Werlich explains this in the following terms:

"A text grammar can be based on the hypothesis that texts, conceived of as assignable to text types, primarily derive their structural distinctions from innate cognitive properties. Accordingly, the five basic text types correlate with forms and ranges of human cognition. They reflect the basic cognitive processes of contextual categorization. These are:

1. differentiation and interrelation of perceptions in space in the text type of description;
2. differentiation and interrelation of perceptions in time in the text type of narration;
3. comprehension of general concepts through differentiation by analysis and/or comprehension of particular concepts through differentiation by subsumptive synthesis in the text type of exposition;
4. judging that is the establishment of relations between and among concepts through the extraction of similarities, contrasts, and transformations from them in the text type of argumentation;
5. and planning of future behaviour by subdivision or subsumption in the text type of instruction.

Werlich (1983: 21)

Like Mason (1982), Hatim shares with De Beaugrande & Dressler, in general terms, the notion of 'function', (i.e. that a text may be known by its function). However, according to Hatim, this is not the whole story. Hatim believes that "it is a definition of text function which determines the efficiency,
effectiveness, and appropriateness of textual occurrences (Hatim, 1987: 104). Hatim also believes that, for translation purposes, variables such as pragmatic, semiotic, and communicative purposes should be introduced. These variables have to be presented to define the interface and the correlation between linguistic expression and categories from 'social theory'. Pragmatics here refers to action on the environment; semiotics refers to interaction with the environment, and communicative purpose refers to the transaction which creates an environment in which 'text-typological focus' realizes the communicative purpose of a given text. Neither De Beaugrande & Dressier nor Werlich specifies these variables. Hatim's interest then may be due to the fact that his study was conducted at a later stage when there was a wide variety of approaches to text-typology that had been explained and developed.

Unlike Werlich, Hatim adopts De Beaugrande & Dressler's notion that a typology of texts must be correlated with typologies of discourse and situations. Unless the appropriateness of a text-type to its setting of occurrence is judged, participants cannot even determine the means of upholding the criteria of textuality. For De Beaugrande & Dressler, the demands for cohesion and coherence are less strict in conversation, whereas the demands in scientific texts are elaborately upheld.

According to De Beaugrande & Dressler, one would at least be able to identify some 'dominances', though without a strict
categorization for every conceivable example. The term 'text-type' according to them is:

"A set of heuristics for producing, predicting, and processing textual occurrences, and hence acts as a prominent determiner of efficiency, effectiveness, and appropriateness."

De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981: 186)

Taking this wide perspective into account and the kinds of parameters each approach has, one can illustrate these three models diagrammatically as shown on the following page.

One other difference that needs to be analyzed between Werlich's approach and Hatim's is the notion of 'context specification' (see Diagram (4) below).

As shown below, Hatim's model is different from that of Werlich in that he takes context as an alternative to the commonly adopted notion of 'register'. According to Hatim, the analysis of register, in practice, is very important but is not sufficient or explanatorily adequate. This analysis, he argues, produces the so-called "Languages" such as the "Language of science", while ignoring the rich range of textual activities which characterize the communicative potential of "doing a science". In commenting on Werlich's model, Hatim states:

"The analysis of context in terms of language use (field, etc.) and user (idiolect, regional dialect, etc.), as practised by the traditional register analysis, leaves important aspects of textuality unaccounted for. This inadequacy stems from the assumption that text is the sum total of its constituent parts."

Hatim (1984: 146)

1) Functional approach ➔ Discourse and ➔ Subsuming function
   Situations ➔ Speaker's intention
   give rise to
text-types

   Descriptive
   (describes objects)
   Narrative
   (arranges actions)
   Argumentative
   (promotes acceptance)
   or situations)
   and events)
   of beliefs and ideas)

Diagram (3) THE INTERPRETATION OF TEXT-CATEGORIZATION OF WERLICH (1983)

2) Contextual & psycho-Analytical approach ➔ Contextual factors
   Innate Biological Properties
   give rise to
text-types

   Descriptive
   (Focuses on factual phenomena & relations in space)
   Narrative
   (Focuses on factual phenomena & relations in time)
   Expository
   (Chooses constituent elements manifested in a term or a mental construct)
   Argumentative
   (Proposes relations between concepts of phenomena)
   Instructional
   (Tells X what to do)


3) Pragma-Semio-Communicative ➔ Context Specifications ➔ Communicative purpose
   give rise to
text-types

   Expository
   (Focuses on objects and events and relations in space and time)
   Argumentative
   (Can be overt or covert argument)
   Instructive
   (Following future (counter) behaviour)
   Pragmatics
   Semiotics
   Communicative purpose

(focuses on objects and events and relations in space)
(focuses on events and concepts)
(focuses on concepts)

62
It is evident that there is a clear resemblance between Hatim's text-typology and that of De Beaugrande & Dressler. Hatim is partially concerned with the fact that text-linguistics involves the setting up of a text-typology in which language is classified in terms of text-communicative purposes. It has also been argued by Zydatiss (1983): the whole notion of text types is not a linguistic one, but that linguistic analysis must be supplemented and correlated with the analysis of 'function' of language in the process of communication. For Hatim as well as for De Beaugrande & Dressler, language users (writers, producers as well as receivers of language) approach text by reacting and interacting with different kinds of context; this is done through a process of construction which identifies a number of contextual variables; these are called context-specifications and involve pragmatics, semiotics, and communicative purpose (as discussed above).

Basing himself on context-specifications, Hatim (1983) goes further than De Beaugrande and Werlich to work out his own text-typology. In modifying Werlich's model, for example, Hatim reduces Werlich's five text-types to three (see Diagram 4 above). Hatim considers 'Descriptive' and 'Narrative' sub-text types as 'Expository Texts'. This is due to the fact that both of these texts exhibit or provide similar information. Hatim also introduces another 'sub-text-type' within the expository text, and that is the 'conceptual text' (focuses on concepts). All these texts are subsumed under the category "Expository Texts".
Within these context-specifications, unlike Werlich, Hatim demonstrates that the user of language responds to a set of signals related to text or discourse. He argues that these signals constitute the most favourable conditions for the successful realization of texts. Hatim says:

"It is this pragma-semio-communicative decision on the part of discourse users, and the acceptance of such a decision by discourse receivers, which constitute the optimum conditions for the successful realization of the text."

Hatim (1984: 147)

To sum up, text-types are characterized or defined similarly by the three models presented above. However, they are different in terms of focus. In their functional approach, De Beaugrande & Dressler suggest that discourse actions or situations and the speaker's intention (function of the text) appear to be the determining factors between text-types. In contrast, Werlich, using a psycho-analytical approach, believes that not only contextual factors but also innate biological properties in the communicant's mind should be correlated in order to identify text-types. De Beaugrande & Dressler look at text-types as a linguistic product stemming from the function of the texts, whereas Werlich looks at text-types as a linguistic process occurring in the speaker's/hearer's mind. Above all, De Beaugrande & Dressler view text-types from a theoretical perspective; they are not interested in structural analysis which is orientated towards applied linguistics.
Hatim believes that the contextual variables of pragma-semio-communicative/conceptual/spatial/temporal transaction give rise to text-types. These context-specification variables should be presented to define the interaction between linguistic expression and the categories from social theory. While Hatim's text-typology is relatively useful, his definition of what he calls 'context-specifications' seems to be always changeable and inconsistent. In defining 'pragmatics' and 'semiotics', Hatim proposes varying definitions. For example, Hatim (1984: 147) defines pragmatics as 'action on the environment'; later, he defines it as 'when language users react to signals'. Hatim (1987: 102) defines it as 'what the text-producers attempt to achieve'; and in Hatim & Mason (1990: 12), they define it as that 'which attempts to account for the ways in which we perceive the underlying meaning on the basis of what we already know or assume to be the case'. At the same time, Hatim & Mason (1990: 51) proposes a definition of 'functional tenor' as "what language is used for". This kind of definition represents their definition of 'pragmatics'. As for 'semiotics', it is almost the same case; sometimes Hatim defines it as interaction with the environment (Hatim 1984: 147); at other times, it is when language users react to signals related to interaction with the environment; it is treating a communicative item as a sign within a system of signs (Hatim & Mason 1990: 57). This kind of inconsistency will be tackled later in Chapter (7), where an attempt will be made to introduce an adequate definition for each one of these concepts.
As for Werlich’s shortcoming, John (1988) claims that one of the delinquencies of his approach, which is not realized by Hatim, is that he does not account for poetic texts (e.g. poems), although some poetic texts can be discovered which are congruous to at least some of the types of texts recognized by Werlich such as "The Rhyme of the Ancient Mariner". This poetic text can be identified as 'Narrative'. Despite these shortcomings, the model of Werlich as well as those of De Beaugrande & Dressler and Hatim are helpful in terms of the process of text-categorization and the analysis of text-typology.

Basing myself on the text-typological model of Hatim in particular, I see text as the product of interaction of the producer/writer of the text and the expected reaction of the text receiver. For translation purposes, this is important for the receiver in order to understand the properties and the main purpose of the text. The text-producer's interaction has to meet the text-receiver's reaction in order for the text to be effective, appropriate, and meaningful. In terms of text-type classification, Hatim's model and that of De Beaugrande & Dressler's will be the models upon which this study will be based, not only because these models suit the field of my study, but also because of the fact that Hatim adopts a text-oriented perspective in which context specification variables such as pragmatics, semiotics, and communicative purposes play an important role in the process of translation. Also, like Mason (1982), Hatim believes that translation is a text-orientated process in which the translator takes the text as the main domain of translation, and not words or phrases.
Within the generic structure of editorials, and despite the inconsistency of Hatim's definitions of context-specifications, I can easily relate these contextual variables to this argumentative text-form (editorials). That is, the structure of editorials represents actions on the environment. This means that text-producers attempt to achieve a particular purpose (e.g. persuade, etc.) while not reflecting their reader's views, and text-receivers, in their turn, attempt to understand the properties of that text and then reject or accept the argument. This is realized by what it is called 'pragmatics'. Also, editorials have discoursal signals that are represented as signs. These signs are signs of entities, states of affairs, etc.; they stand for something. Each sign interacts with another yielding the semiotic interaction with the environment. This is realized by the variable 'semiotics'. This will lead us to a particular framework within which communication takes place, and this can be done by defining aspects of time, place, text-receiver, field, mode, etc. These contextual variables are extremely important for analytical as well as translational procedures of Arabic argumentative discourse in general and editorials in particular.

Before we go any further and investigate discourse genres, an attempt will be made to provide a brief account on the structure of an English form of argumentation, (i.e. English language editorials). This is extremely significant for manifesting the differences of structure between Arabic and English.
2.2.2 English language editorials

It has been claimed that there is no explicit theory of editorials (Dijk 1989). These texts or discourse genres are intended and structured in such a way as to express and convey the assessment and the belief of the newspaper. This kind of assessment has particular social as well as political significance.

Despite the lack of material that has been produced on editorials as well as their structure, it is one of the objectives of this thesis, particularly for translation purposes, to investigate the main generic structure of English editorials from the sources available to us. This is a necessary step in order to investigate later the main differences as well as the similarities between English and Arabic editorials. While the definition and the structure of Arabic editorials is to be investigated later, the potential structure of their English counterpart seems to have a great deal in common with them.

In a paper on 'Race, riots and the press' (Dijk 1989), Dijk analyzes editorials in British press. Dijk believes that English editorials are statements of opinion; their structure is subsumed under the following categories:

(1) Definition (i.e. statements which define the situation or give a summarizing description of what happened.)
(2) Evaluation (i.e. statements that can evaluate and explain the situation according to causes of events and reasons of actions (why did it take place?).

(3) Recommendation which can be subsumed under the general categories 'conclusion'. In the conclusion, statements explain what should happen.

Diagrammatically, potential English language editorials can be represented as follows:

```
Editorials

  Definition  Evaluation  Conclusion
(i.e. situation)
```

Diagram (5)

Representation of English language editorials

The above generic structure of English language editorials is extremely general, due to the fact that Dijk's intention was not to define more specifically the main constituents of editorials. However, according to Dijk, 'statements of opinion' (i.e. editorial) can be 'defensible' and 'acceptable'. These two positions should be substantiated. According to Dijk, explanation or evaluation of the situation should always be supported by reasons and justifications and editorials therefore
exhibit argumentative structure; these texts are goal-oriented, (i.e. they have a tendency to persuade). A study of these argumentative texts, in particular their textual moves, can be found in Emeren, Gorrtendorst and Kruijer (1984).

The structure postulated above for English language editorial texts unfortunately does not explain specifically the main constituents of each category (e.g. definition: what elements constitute a definition or situation, etc.); it does not also investigate whether or not there are optional or obligatory elements within the process of writing an editorial. Above all, the structure does not specify whether the definition or the situation involves a defence or acceptance of the writer's statement or that of his opponent. All these have a bearing on clarifying the main components of English language editorials. All these drawbacks will be tackled later where an attempt will be made to compare Arabic and English editorials. This attempt will be made to show the text-producer's strategy in Arabic as well as in English. This is a necessary step in order to find out the most appropriate way of approximating the pragma-semiotic textual meaning of the two languages. These socio-cultural and political elements, since they represent the ideological framework inherent in the community, are of unequivocal significance in the process of translation.

To sum up, the above discussion has been made to investigate the structure of English language editorials, a necessary step in order to show the basic constituents of these text-forms. In what follows, an attempt will be made to investigate discourse
2.3 Discourse genres

Some linguists or discourse analysts go further in terms of the structure and the organization of discourse to point out that the only way to describe discourse as a unified whole is to describe its generic structure. Longacre (1983), Hasan (1973, 1975), Halliday (1975, 1977) and Dijk (1985b) are advocates of this notion. Despite the fact that those linguists have a similar understanding of the notion of "genre", they have different understandings in terms of the way they would place generic description in their descriptive work. For instance, unlike Longacre, Van Dijk, Hasan, and Halliday suggest that a generic description is not considered to be part of the linguistic study of language proper. It is part of investigating text/discourse in terms of its social structure and social conventions and cultural and linguistic properties. This is what characterizes a particular text as a genre. However, before we go further into the exploration of Longacre's discourse genre, and try to see the kinds of parameters he employed to sort out his discourse genres, an attempt will be made here to define what a genre is. This notion is presented below:
2.3.1 Definition of a genre

Given the social semiotic structure of a language, one may look at a genre as a distinctive class of texts that arises from a specific social situation. It is the existence of such classes that makes language socially relevant. A genre is a social situation that has been sanctioned by culture which has specific functions of meaning that are reflected in language. Above all, genre, being itself a product of culture and ideology, is what gives a text a major part of its meaning. This is my view of what a genre is; it is an attempted synthesis of the views of others. Also important are the views of other linguists who believe that the understanding of what a genre is and how this distinctive unit functions will enhance our understanding of language.

There are some linguists who believe that the only way to describe a text or any piece of language, as a unified whole, is to describe its generic structure (Halliday, 1977, 1975; Hasan, 1973, 1975). Hasan believes that 'genre' may be considered as an extension of 'mode'. The variable 'mode' along with the other two variables 'field' and 'tenor' make up the three elements for systematizing what is called 'context of situation'. According to Halliday (1977), 'field', 'mode' and 'tenor' are the semiotic structure of the situation. What 'mode' refers to here is the specific function that the actual text is supposed to serve (e.g. exposition, description, persuasion, narration, etc.).
Hasan (1973, 1975, 1984a, 1984b) suggests that a piece of scientific description would be different from a piece of literary description, but the differences one finds between these two pieces should be explainable in terms of their linguistic properties. Hasan (1984a, 1984b); Halliday & Hasan (1985), argue that the identity of a text, as an instance of a genre, comes to be defined through structural potential (SP) which is determined by the variables of context of situation: 'field', 'mode', and 'tenor'. Structural potential (SP) here refers to the actual structure that consists of elements which are functional; these elements are realized by lexico-grammatical units (Halliday, 1961). The functions of these elements are determined by the semiotics of the text genre. Hasan says:

"Each element (beginning, middle and end in the case of Greek tragedy) is realized by some combination of lexico-grammatical units; the relationship between these and the text is that of realization, not of constituency. The elements of text structure cannot be defined by reference to the rank status of sequential ordering of the lexico-grammatical units which have the function of realizing these elements. To be at all viable, the definition will have to be functional (Sinclair and Coulthard, 1975), the functions themselves being determined by the semiotics of the text genre."

(Hasan, 1978: 229)

Like Hasan (1973, 1975), Martin (1985) conceives of genres as distinctive classes that are widely interpreted as social
processes. He believes that the term 'genre' represents an abstraction of a different kind functioning as a semiotic system. Martin believes that 'genre' represents the verbal strategies used to accomplish social purposes of many kinds. The term 'genre' is seen as to regulate what is happening on the register by constraining possibilities of combining 'field', 'mode' and 'tenor' in society. Martin says: "genres are how things get done, when language is used to accomplish them" (Martin 1985: 250). Similarly, Hasan explains the fact that the semiotic level (i.e. level of context of situation) and the extra-linguistic characteristics can be related to language by abstract variables such as 'field', 'mode', and 'tenor'; these variables are referred to as the 'contextual construct' (CC). When a specific extra-linguistic situation is in question, these variables are seen to have specific values that can be called 'contextual configuration' (CConf.) The contextual configuration of a particular social context is what determines the type of discourse (i.e. genre).

The generic structures are displayed by linear representation. Linear representation means the representation of the elements of the structural potential in terms of sequences. For example, in the genre of buying and selling, and when 'field', 'mode', and 'tenor' have specific values, the genre would be represented as follows:
According to Hasan, this generic structure, which is displayed by linear representation, denotes the functions of the social processes.

To sum up, a text is an instance of a genre if it can be shown that it is generated from the structural potential (SP) of that genre in such a way that it includes all obligatory elements of the SP; it should also follow the sequence of elements through linear representation.

Text-forms such as editorials, stories, nursery tales, etc. are considered to be discourse genres, for they appear to contain obvious clues as to their contextual identification. Also, the genre of each of these expressions is affected by its purposes; they are social institutions known to people by their relevant social characteristics. Above all, they display social properties that can be expressed by a wide range of possible textual structure (Hasan, 1978, 1979). As Hasan argues, within the entire range 'genre', one recognizes at least the context of creation, whereby the characteristics of a genre, which will be manifested in Longacre's artistic conventions of the text-

Key to the notation used in the above structure:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>G</th>
<th>S</th>
<th>&lt;&gt;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Greeting</td>
<td>Sale</td>
<td>Inclusion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SI</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>^</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale Initiation</td>
<td>Purchase</td>
<td>Fixed Order</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SE</td>
<td>PC</td>
<td>↝</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale Enquiry</td>
<td>Purchase Closure</td>
<td>Recursiveness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SR</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>{}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sale Request</td>
<td>Finis</td>
<td>Limitation for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[]</td>
<td>_</td>
<td>Homogeneous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mobility</td>
<td>()</td>
<td>Optionality</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mobility</td>
<td>()</td>
<td>Recursiveness</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
producer's community, are reflected, and the context of the text-receiver reflects communal attitudes and beliefs. The basic discourse genres are investigated below.

2.4 Longacre's discourse genres

Longacre believes that linguists who ignore discourse types can only come to grief (Longacre, 1983: 1). Longacre demonstrates this by the example of the student of language typology or diachronic change. He points out that if, in the study of word-order typologies, we take data from a particular kind of language, where different types of discourse (e.g. narrative vs. expository) have differing word-orders, then any kind of analogy between such discourse types can be invalidated by the failure to control these differences. Longacre notes that it is reasonable to compare California oranges with Florida oranges, but it is less useful or even futile to compare California oranges with Washington apples. One may in this case compare 'oranges' with 'oranges' or 'cars' with 'cars' as, most of the time, they have the same properties. One cannot compare, on the other hand, 'oranges' with 'apples' or 'men' with 'animals' as these two classes show differing properties and forms.

In the same way, one may compare sentences from narrative discourse in language A with sentences from narrative discourse in language B; but it is misleading, as Longacre argues, to
compare sentences from narrative discourse in language A with sentences from expository discourse in language B.

Basing himself on an earlier work (Longacre, 1970, 1974a, 1974b, 1976), Longacre (1983) modifies his model of discourse slightly, introducing new terminology and additional information (e.g. contingent temporal succession... instead of 'chronological linkage' or 'projection' instead of projected time, etc.). Longacre classifies discourse genres according to two basic parameters: 'Contingent Temporal Succession' (CTS) and 'Agent Orientation' (AO). According to Longacre, CTS refers to a framework of temporal succession in which (often most) events or doings are contingent on previous events or doings. As for AO, it is the orientation of agent (c.f. Longacre 1983, Chapter 5) with at least a potential identity of agent reference running through the discourse.

Longacre sees these two parameters as intersecting to give a four-way classification of types of discourse. These discourse types are as follows:

1. Narrative discourse: this involves telling a story or narrating an event. This type of discourse is characterized as (+ CTS) and (+AO).

2. Procedural discourse: this type of discourse is concerned with 'how-to-do-it' or 'how-it-is-done'. Within this discourse type, the steps of procedures are ordered and attention is on what is done or made, not on who does it.
Therefore, this discourse type is characterized as (+CTS) and
(-AO).

3. Behavioural discourse: this type subsumes a broad category
including exhortation, eulogy and political speeches of
candidates. Behavioural discourse deals with how people do
or should behave. This discourse is characterized as (-CTS)
and (-AO).

4. Expository discourse: this type includes essays, scientific
articles and descriptive material; it explains how things
are. In addition, it is subject-matter oriented and time is
not focal. Thus, this type of discourse is characterized as
(-CTS) and (-AO)).

Longacre defines these two parameters carefully. He also
broadens his classification by introducing a third parameter.
This parameter is called 'projection' (proj) (previously called
projected time, Longacre, 1974c). According to Longacre,
'projection' can be posited to give eight discourse types instead
of four.

According to Longacre, 'projection' is that which has to do
with a situation or action that is contemplated, enjoined, or
anticipated but not realized. Therefore, narrative discourse
types, as a broad category, has the category of prophecy, which
is (+proj), (i.e. the events are represented as not having
already taken place).
In terms of procedural discourse, Longacre points out that this discourse type distinguishes varieties which are (+proj) — how to do it — versus varieties that are (-proj) — how it used to be done or is being done.

The third discourse-type is that of behavioural discourse which also distinguishes (+proj) as in hortatory discourse or a campaign promises speech versus (-proj) as in a eulogy. The final type of discourse is that of the expository discourse; it is usually (-proj), but it can also be (+proj) (e.g. a speech, submitting a budget or an economic plan).

Longacre argues that although a scheme in three parameters captures useful distinctions, a fourth parameter can be added. This fourth one is called 'Tension' (T). This parameter has to do with whether a discourse reflects a struggle or polarization of some sort. This parameter is related to all narrative discourses, where episodic, (-T), narrative which is distinguished from climatic narrative (+T). The first three parameters are diagrammatically represented on the following page.

2.4.1 Surface structure type

The scheme that is outlined above is a scheme of deep structure; deep structure, which is semantically oriented, is the role (abstract) representation of a particular structure which plays an essential role in explaining the patterns within
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>C S</th>
<th>NARRATIVE</th>
<th>PROCEDURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>O U</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>+ N C</td>
<td>Prophecy</td>
<td>How-to-do-it +Proj.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T C</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I E</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N S</td>
<td>Story</td>
<td>How-it-was-done</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E I</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N O</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T N</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C S</td>
<td>BEHAVIOURAL</td>
<td>EXPOSITORY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O U</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- N C</td>
<td>Hortatory</td>
<td>Budget Proposal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T C</td>
<td>Promissory</td>
<td>Futuristic Essay +Proj.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I E</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N S</td>
<td>Eulogy</td>
<td>Scientific Paper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G S</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E I</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N O</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T N</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Diagram (5)
Notional types (fourth parameter, tension, is not represented)
discourse; it is mainly concerned with the underlying structure and properties of discourse types. Such a scheme is also applicable to drama type if one adds 'drama' as a split off from narrative of the story variety.

According to Longacre, drama contrasts with other types of discourse; it is essentially composed of dialogue paragraphs which are not composed of quotation sentences. This contrasts with reported dialogues in a narrative where one most commonly finds that the dialogue paragraphs feature quotation formulas. Longacre adds that in especially lively sections of narrative discourse, one may find dialogue paragraphs which approximate the form of drama (where each character speaks out without a preceding "John said..."). He also adds that even more profound is the contrast of drama with procedural discourse which typically has a warm kind of dialogue. Longacre concludes that in expository and hortatory discourses, dialogue is not so likely to occur as pseudo-dialogue, (i.e. use of the rhetorical and apostrophe). The purpose of the rhetorical question in expository discourse is to elicit attention; it is essentially a "technique device". In hortatory discourse, the rhetorical question may be used to reprimand as well as to teach.

For the purpose of surface structure classification, Longacre points out that these two parameters can be redefined. Rather than speaking of an abstract contingent succession, one can speak more concretely of 'chronological linkage' as a characteristic of all sorts of narrative and procedural discourses, but not a characteristic of behavioural and
expository discourses which have instead logical linkage. One may also find that in narrative and expository discourses, there is an 'agent reference', whereas these characteristics are not found in procedural discourse. Procedural discourse is goal or activity focused, whereas expository discourse has themes rather than participants.

Longacre goes on to demonstrate other characteristics that distinguish one discourse from another. These are characteristics such as prescriptive, types of orientation, and person orientation, etc. These parameters of discourse genres are diagrammatically represented on the following page.

In terms of linkage within the specific surface structure, Longacre explains that narrative and procedural discourses have, more or less, the same linkage. Narrative ranges from short stories to novels, whereas procedural discourse ranges from food recipes to the 'how-to-do-it' book. Expository discourse tends to have linkage through sentence topic; it ranges from essays to scientific articles.

The fourth type of discourse is hortatory, of which linkage is basically regarded as the main characteristic; it depends heavily on linkage through conditional, cause and purpose margins or their equivalents within a given language. Hortatory discourse ranges from sermons to pep-talks, to addresses of generals, etc. Longacre suggests that this kind of discourse is a cultural one; one can scarcely conceive of a culture where somebody does not give advice to somebody else verbally or urge on him a change of conduct.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>- Prescriptive</th>
<th>+ Prescriptive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Narrative (many types)</td>
<td>Procedural (many types; instructional)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. 1/3 persons</td>
<td>1. Pseudo (non-specific persons)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Actor oriented</td>
<td>2. Goal oriented</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Accomplished time encodes as past or present</td>
<td>3. Projected time encodes as past, present, or future</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

+ Succession (chronological)

Drama

1. Multiple 1/2 person
2. Accomplished time as concurrent
3. Dialogue paragraphs without quotation formulas

- Succession (chron.)

Expository (several includes descriptive) | Hortatory (sermons, pep talks, etc.)

1. Any person (usually 3rd) | 1. 2nd person
2. Subject matter oriented | 2. Addressee oriented
3. Time not focal | 3. Commands, suggestions encode as imperative or 'softened' commands
4. Logical linkage | 4. Logical linkage

Diagram (7)
Representation of some discourse genres
2.4.2 Overall discourse structure

For each discourse genre, Longacre (1968, 1974c) has specified a tagmemic formula; he argues that formulaic beginnings and endings are commonly formed in many languages. A formulaic beginning is called 'aperture', and a formulaic ending is called 'finis'. Longacre points out that if such a formulaic beginning is present, the type of discourse is likely to proceed in a section formed in the following slot, which can be labelled as 'stage' for narrative discourse and 'introduction' for other types. As for the 'closure', this precedes the 'finis'. The term 'closure' is a wrap-up of a discourse. All these slots occur in the case of Narrative discourse.

Within the body of discourse, 'episodes' form the slots of Narrative and 'points' the slots of Expository and Behavioural discourse. Longacre also calls the main slots of Procedural discourse 'procedures', and the slots of Drama 'acts'.

As pointed out earlier (pp. 31-32), Longacre argues that within the overall discourse structure, the fundamental task of the author of the discourse should be looked at carefully; to flesh out from the abstract its full-bodied structure along with all its necessary detail and previous knowledge. Longacre (1978) says:

"From an abstract of a story, the author generates a whole story. You might say he starts out with a backbone, expands it to a skeleton, and then puts flesh and skin on it. The job of the analyst is
go at this in reverse, to look through the flesh and skin to the skeletal structure beneath and to perceive the fundamental structure of the whole."

Longacre (1978: 105)

For the analysis of texts, Longacre points out that in terms of discourse constituents, there are units underlying discourse. First, discourse consists of functional slots as described above. For example, in the case of narrative discourse, there are the slots of 'aperture', 'stage', 'episode', etc. Second, each of these functional slots is expounded by either a paragraph or an embedded discourse. One should take into account that embedded discourses do not have exactly the same structure as unembedded independent discourses. In the same way, dependent clauses do not have the same structure as independent ones. However, Longacre argues that one can assume as many layers of embedded discourse as necessary until one gets down to discourses composed only of paragraphs.

To sum up, Longacre's classification of discourse genres is based on two primary parameters: + chronological linkage and + agent orientation. Along these two primary parameters, there are two secondary ones: + projected time and + tension. The two primary parameters combine to give us the four main discourse genres discussed above.
2.5 Beekman & Callow's work

Following Longacre, Beekman & Callow believe that discourse should be analyzed in terms of relations between propositions. Beekman & Callow (1979, 1988); Beekman (1970, 1979); and Callow (1970, 1974) argue that these propositions are general characteristics of discourse.

According to Beekman & Callow, discourse consists of relations and these relations tie together the parts that make up the whole discourse. It is these relations, subsisting between units of discourse (i.e. propositions, paraphrase, and larger units) that give unity and structure to discourse.

Because of the fact that languages share some characteristics in common, Beekman & Callow argue that most languages have, within their linguistic system, several means for signalling the specific types of relations involved; these may include conjunctive elements, prepositions, conjunctive affixes, etc. Some of these may be utilized between propositions, others are employed between larger units. However, propositions are related implicitly as well as explicitly, and the absence of the signalling devices or connectives does not necessarily mean that the two semantic units or propositions are not related. This aspect has been clarified by Brown & Yule (1983) and De Beaugrande (1980) who state that relations can hold between sentences even though there is no explicit signalling device between them.
Beekman & Callow go on to say that relations can be of different types, and it is expected to find the following types of relation within a discourse:

1. **Specific types of addition relations**
   
   chronological sequence
   
   simultaneity
   
   alteration
   
   conversational exchange
   
   matched support propositions

2. **Specific types of associative relations**
   
   1. **Support relations by clarification** (using a proposition with distinct information). These are:
   
      manner
   
      comparison
   
      contrast

   2. **Support relations by clarification** (using a proposition with similar information). These are:
   
      equivalence
   
      generic-specific
   
      amplification-contraction
3. **Support relations by argument.** These relations include:

reason-result
means-result
means-purpose
condition-consequence
concession-contra-expectation
grounds-conclusion

4. **Support relations by orientation.** These relations are:

time
location
circumstance

It is not my intention to explain or demonstrate here as these relations will be demonstrated later (see Chapter 5). Suffice it to say that these relations give us some insights and guidelines in explaining or identifying the semantic structure of argumentative discourse in general and our editorial text-forms in particular; these relations will be used in this study as devices for signalling as well as interpreting the structure of the text-forms under discussion. Unlike Winter's list of relations, these relations attempt to be exhaustive and inclusive; they also embody different types of functions and have
a significant role to play in argumentation. As Beekman & Callow state:

"The support proposition clarifies another proposition by explaining or highlighting it. The support proposition argues for another proposition by giving its logical antecedent or consequent. The support proposition orients another proposition by giving its setting relative to time or space or other Events.

Beekman & Callow (1988: 289-290)

Due to the fact that our main goal in this study is to see how smaller units combine into larger ones, and how these larger units combine into sections, etc., Beekman & Callow's list of relations has been chosen as most suitable for this purpose. For a detailed justification of the reasons behind the choice of Beekman & Callow's list of relations, see Chapter (4).

Looking at language or any piece of language as a combination of different discourse types, Beekman & Callow (1988); Beekman & Callow (1979); and Callow (1974), go further in arguing that while these relations have a facilitatory power in anatomizing the main constituents of discourse, the classification of such discourse also has useful effects. This is despite the fact that there are no pure types (Beekman & Callow, 1979). The justification behind this claim arises from the text-producer's needs or goals in writing; it also arises from the specific situation within a total communication situation. These needs, Beekman & Callow argue, lead the text-producer to focus or select a particular topic from all the
topics accessible to him, and in turn elaborate or comment on it. To this effect, the writer decides whatever he wants to say about his topic and organizes his comments into a structured framework, following a conventional pattern so as to achieve his goal in an effective manner. Thus, the arrangement or organization of his own comments on a particular topic gives rise to the emergence of discourse types.

While Beekman & Callow argue that any division of literature into discourse types represents an abstraction from actual discourse, they still maintain that the distinction between types of discourse is to a large extent tenable. However, one should not expect, in this case, that a pure discourse is typical. On the contrary, one is more likely to find that there is a combination of discourse types within each discourse. Put differently, in any piece of writing, a text analyst is more likely to find that any type of discourse contains, within its main constituents, a combination of other discourse types. For instance, in a narrative discourse, one expects to find description and expository, and in an expository discourse, one expects to find narrative or conversational discourse types.

Furthermore, discourse can be applied to different types of communication units. However, what is typical according to Beekman (1979) is that discourse patterns can and should be applied down to the smallest communication unit: namely the paragraph. As a result, discourse can be classified into different types. These are the following:
1. Narrative
2. Expository
3. Hortatory
4. Procedural

Before we go further and define each discourse type, it is worth noting that Beekman & Callow relate these discourse types to two basic forms of human communication. These are dialogue and monologue. In this respect, Beekman & Callow say:

"It seems a reasonable assumption that dialogue is the basic form of human communication, A talking to B and B replying to A; or A, B, and C talking together, etc. And as the basic form, it readily makes use of all the major types. A speaker may tell a story, argue a point, give instruction how something is to be done, urge conduct on others."

Beekman & Callow (1979: 22)

In establishing the relationship between dialogue and monologue, Beekman & Callow argue that monologue is a special form of dialogue. And, just like dialogue, monologue can and does make use of the four types of discourse.

2.5.1 Discourse types

It has been suggested that major types of discourse show different characteristic in most languages. Awareness of this is absolutely essential in translation. Following Longacre, Beekman & Callow recognize the following discourse types:
1. Expository discourse: this type of discourse typically answers the questions:

   a. What is claimed and why?
   b. What is the explanation?
   c. Why is that so?

   According to Beekman & Callow, expository discourse involves all types of writings whose main aim is to define, explain and interpret. This type of discourse is used in almost all forms of discourse. Beekman & Callow justify this by saying that expository discourse embraces most technical and scientific writing; it also includes textbooks, magazines, essays, etc. Expository discourse contains logically related sequences of propositions such as generic-specific, grounds-conclusion, etc. These propositional sequences occur frequently in this type of discourse.

2. Hortatory discourse: because of the fact that expository discourse and hortatory discourse share most of their characteristics, Beekman & Callow are unable to distinguish clearly between expository discourse and hortatory discourse. However, hortatory discourse, according to them, involves a course of action which is supported by grounds justifying requests made, and making the reader respond or act upon these requests. In other words, in hortatory discourse, the
text-producer aims at persuading the reader to adhere to his proposal. It typically answers the questions:

a. What should be done?
b. Why should it be done?

Because of the fact that hortatory discourse and expository discourse consist of almost the same logically related sequences of propositions with relations such as reason-result, grounds-conclusion, etc., they are not fully distinguishable from one another. That is, hortatory discourse usually contains expository discourse, but expository discourse does not always contain hortatory discourse. This means that the distinction between expository discourse and hortatory is never purely attainable. But, if one takes the fact that expository discourse, by definition, does not embrace exhortation or proposal, then, one can differentiate between the two in terms of modality and not clause relations.

3. Procedural discourse: in procedural discourse, time is significant along with a combination of logical relations. Procedural discourse typically answers the question "How is it done and in what order?". To this effect, unlike hortatory, procedural discourse embraces primarily chronologically based sequences of actions, in which time has a significant role to play in the construction of the framework.
4. Narrative discourse: within this type of discourse, the main focus of the reader is on the course of events. That is, narrative discourse typically answers the following questions:

1. What happened?
2. How did it happen?
3. Who did it?
4. Where was it done?

The answers to the above questions are essential elements in almost all narrative discourse. To this effect, this type of discourse is, generally speaking, introduced with a setting; it also focuses upon incidents which, in one way or another, implicate or include the characters. Narrative discourse also contains a sequential chronological framework of events.

Beekman & Callow suggest that there are two types of narrative discourse. These are as follows:

1. Narrative which does not evolve around a plot: in this type of discourse, there is a simple chronological sequence of propositions. These propositions are related by 'addition' relation. Beekman & Callow illustrate this point by noting that children's early efforts at writing essays are a case in point. They argue that children start writing essays in the following form:
"I went home and I ate my supper and then I played with my dog. Then I went outside and went to my friend June's house and we played together and ...."

Beekman & Callow (1979: 24)

2. Narrative which evolves around a plot: narrative discourse with plot can be classified into two sub-types: discourse with plot that evolves around a struggle or conflict, and discourse that does not. For instance, Beekman & Callow define narrative episodes, sciences, arts, etc., that do not evolve around the plot role of a problem, as "non problem" narratives, whereas those that do are called "problem" narratives. According to Beekman & Callow, "non-problem" narrative (i.e. they do not involve struggle or contest) are built around a pair of stimulus-response, question-answer, etc., whereas episodes and larger units in the four Gospels are cases of problem-based narratives.

In a narrative discourse sub-type with a plot, the struggle can be physical-animal against animal, man against nature, etc. This conflict or struggle leads towards a climax and a resolution of the conflict. Thus, a problem narrative discourse always consists of a problem and its solution.

2.5.2 Parameters of discourse types

To distinguish between one discourse type and another, Beekman & Callow establish two sets of parameters. These are as follows:
1. The presence or absence of a chronological framework within which the logical relations are presented.

2. The presence of the illocutionary perspective of command or its absence. (i.e a specific modality).

Beekman & Callow argue that all discourse types use logical relations because of the fact that such discourse types are examples of rational discourse. However, in narrative and procedural discourses, events are chronologically presented leading towards reaching an end in procedural discourse. To clarify the parameters for distinguishing between one discourse type and another, Beekman & Callow present the following modified chart.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of parameter</th>
<th>External Temporal</th>
<th>Internal temporal</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>relations with the presence of a chronological framework</td>
<td>relations in the absence of a chronological framework</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nondirective</td>
<td>narrative discourse</td>
<td>expository discourse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>directive</td>
<td>procedural discourse</td>
<td>hortatory discourse</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Diagram (8)
Parameters for distinguishing between discourse types

96
Beekman & Callow go further in relating these discourse types to the author's purpose. They argue that the purpose of expository discourse is to explain, and the purpose of hortatory discourse is to argue for a thesis or to urge a course of action, whereas the purpose of procedural discourse is to tell how something is done. As far as narrative discourse is concerned, Beekman & Callow point out that this type of discourse is different from all the preceding three discourses due to the fact that the purpose of narrative discourse is not to explain, urge or argue for a thesis, but to recount. Therefore, whenever the text-producer selects or decides the material, by which his main objective can actually be accomplished, he in fact puts himself under certain structural constraints within which he writes his own discourse. These constraints placed upon the text producer, (i.e. constraints placed on the text-producer by himself and determined by his purposes), give rise to the discourse types.

2.6 Summary

The preceding sections show how the study of text linguistics enables linguists to provide criteria for establishing text typologies. The sections also suggest that language cannot be separated from man and his community; these themes are central to the studies of Hasan (1978) and Halliday (1974b).
Moreover, the material that has been presented attempts to compare different approaches to text-typology; it also shows on what basis linguists as well as discourse analysts distinguish between one text-type and another.
CHAPTER 3
THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK FOR THE STUDY OF COHESION

3.0 Introduction

In the previous chapter, we investigated the correlation between discourse, text-type and translation. We have also investigated the categorization of texts into text-types as well as the classification of discourse into discourse genres. These investigations have been made, not only because of their importance for the analysis of written texts, but also for the purpose of assessing the intended meaning (Grice 1975, 1981). The process of text-categorization was made through a comparative study of several approaches (see Section 2.2.1) in an attempt to find out how or in what way each model approaches a particular text, and how these texts give insights into the process of translation.

This chapter is mainly concerned with the notion of cohesion. It investigates this notion as a prelude to applying it to the analysis of our actual argumentative text-forms. The chapter is divided into six sections. Section (3.1) studies the systemic model of Halliday (1973, 1974a); it attempts to show the basic significant characteristics of this model. Section (3.2) investigates the relevance of the systemic model to our analysis and illustrates the factors behind the selection of this model.
and describes the functional components, which are a basic feature of the Hallidayan model.

Following this is Section (3.3) which analyzes Halliday & Hasan's (1976) cohesive model. This section investigates the cohesive devices that are used to link sentences together such as 'reference', 'substitution', 'ellipsis', 'conjunction', and lexical cohesion. This section then assesses Halliday & Hasan's approach to cohesion.

Section (3.4) explains why Halliday & Hasan's (1976) notion of 'lexical cohesion', particularly the notion of 'collocation', poses some problems. It also attempts to remedy this by presenting Hasan's (1983) modified version. Section (3.5) presents Koch's (1982) work on the means of cohesion in Arabic (i.e. parallelism, repetition, etc.). It illustrates how these cohesive means contribute to the coherence of argumentative texts. This brings us to Section (3.6) which summarizes the analysis and attempts to pinpoint the main characteristics of these approaches. Above all, all these sections aim at providing a description of how the concept of 'cohesion' can be utilized.

3.1 Halliday's systemic model for the analysis of texts

Before we turn into the description of the systemic model, it should be pointed out that Halliday's main interest since the 1970's has been around the notion of meaning, and on language learning in functional and semantic terms (Halliday 1973, 1975,
1978, and 1985b). Halliday does not adopt the familiar psycholinguistic perspective of Chomsky in which language is viewed in terms of stored knowledge, but always seeks to relate his work to actual texts.

One may recall that Malinowski (1923) sees language as a mode of action, and Firth (1957) sees language mainly within its social context and the situation in which it is used. Given the relationship between Malinowski and Firth's work and that of Halliday, one can easily deduce that Halliday's work is considerably influenced by the Firthian linguistic analysis and he is therefore called a "neo Firthian" (Robins, 1980); this is manifested in Halliday & Hasan's work (1985); Halliday (1977).

Halliday sees language from an 'inter-organism' point of view; he sees language as part of the individual's behaviour in social communication. Halliday does not see it from an 'intra-organism' point of view in which language is viewed as linguistic knowledge stored in the minds of speakers. Instead, he characterizes language as a form of behaviour and his basic position (Halliday, 1973, 1974b) can be summarized as follows: each one of us, as a member of a particular culture, living within a particular social structure, has a set of options or alternatives which are accessible to us, a set of behavioural choices which we can use or employ in particular social circumstances. This set of behavioural options is called a 'behavioural potential'; this makes up what we 'can do' and includes non-linguistic as well as linguistic behaviours.
It seems obvious that Halliday's main interest here is to study what one 'can do' with language in a given context, about what meanings are at the disposal of the speaker. According to Halliday, 'can mean' is one form of 'can do', and he even states that 'can mean' is 'can do' when translated into language, that is, the range of 'meaning potential' available to the speaker. 'Meaning potential' therefore is the linguistic realization of behaviour potential. It is realized in the language system as lexico-grammatical potential, or what the speaker 'can say'. In this connection, Halliday says:

"The potential of language is a meaning potential. This meaning potential is the linguistic realization of the behaviour potential; 'can mean' is 'can do' when translated into language. The meaning potential is in turn realized in the language system as lexico-grammatical potential, which is what the speaker 'can say'."

(Halliday 1973: 51)

In an attempt to clarify the implications of 'meaning potential', Halliday points out that meaning potential is employed for the potential available to the speaker at a socio-semantic level. The socio-semantic level is related not only to a network of behaviour options that are outside language, but also to the syntax and lexis of the language. The relations involved are realizational in nature. This notion of meaning potential is illustrated in the following formula:
The behavioural potential is realized by the socio-semantic potential which is realized by the lexico-grammatical potential.

Diagrammatically, 'meaning potential' is represented as follows:

   can do ____  can mean ____  can say

Halliday asserts that meaning choices should relate to behavioural choices, which can be interpreted on the basis of some social theory. Halliday in this respect appears to be influenced by Bernstein's (1968, 1971) notion of language in which language plays an effective role in the process of socializing a child. This correlates with Halliday's aim to provide an account of the meaning potential available in behavioural surroundings delineated with respect to the categories or classification provided by a social theory.

As for the systemic model, Halliday (1961, 1968) and Halliday et al (1984) suggest that the language system is composed of three strata; these are semantic, lexicogrammatical and phonological/graphological. In other words, language can be explained as a multiple coding system; this system is comprised of semantic (meanings), lexicogrammatical (forms) and phonological and orthographic (expressions). Meanings are realized as forms, and forms are realized as expressions. The representation of these three strata is shown below:
Halliday goes on to say that the idea of these three strata, which make up the language/linguistic system, assume that language is composed of 'substance', 'form', and 'context'. 'Substance' is the material of language: 'phonic' (audible noises) or 'graphic' (visible symbols) (Halliday 1961: 243). 'Form' is the organization of the substance into meaningful events. As for 'context', it is the relationship of the form to non-linguistic characteristics of the situation in which language is used.

Halliday justifies this assumption by saying that language is transmitted by means of sounds and symbols; it can also display meaningful internal patterns that take place in the world in which we live. The visible symbols, by which language is transmitted, constitute the substance of language, which is
either phonic (audible sounds) or graphic (visible symbols). The internal meaningful patterns into which the substance is arranged are called 'forms of language'. For instance, d, a, e, m are considered to be part of the English alphabet; however, when these letters are arranged, they exhibit the English meaningful pattern Adam.

Under 'form', grammar can be distinguished from lexis. According to Halliday, grammar and lexis merge into each other in the middle; however, these two patterns are different at the extremes. For example, grammar deals with 'closed relations' (i.e. the possibilities from which we make grammatical choices are fixed), whereas lexis deals with 'open relations' (i.e. the possibilities from which we make lexical choices are open). Put differently, grammar can be distinct from lexis in several ways. For example, grammar deals with relations of singular-plural, active-passive, positive-negative, etc.; thus it distinguishes 'Adam hits Amy' from 'Amy is hit by Adam'. Despite that, there is no English grammar that can distinguish between 'Adam loves Amy' and Adam hates Amy', as the verbs, love and hate, have the same grammatical status.

As for lexis, it can distinguish between lexical items that are different and lexical items that are similar. Those can be done through 'collocation' and 'sets'. What is meant by collocation here is the habitual co-occurrence or association of individual lexical items (Robins 1980), and sets are the interrelated lexical items. For example, the lexical item 'cent' co-occurs or collocates with 'dollar', because both of these
lexical items share the same linguistic environment (Enkvist, Spencer, and Gregory 1964: 73).

It follows from this that grammar is different from lexis in the fact that grammar can deal with what lexis cannot. The examples demonstrated above are a case in point.

It is worth noting here that language has a close contact with the world in which we live; it does not occur in isolation from the social setting in which it is a part. While different acts of communications take place between one individual and another, these kinds of communication acts take on different types of situations. Situation is defined here as the extralinguistic setting in which language is used. Thus, linguistics not only deals with the extralinguistic settings, but also with the linguistic forms as well. This is in fact what the systemic model is primarily concerned with.

Furthermore, within this systemic model, there is no indication of whether or not people must know everything about the world. However, this systemic model provides constraints on speech situation through what is called 'field' (a group of acts and subject-matter), 'mode' (medium, spoken or written) and 'tenor' (the relationship among the participants, formal, colloquial, etc.) For more information on these situational constraints, see Halliday et al (1964), Enkvist et al (1964), Gregory (1967), and Gregory and Carrol (1978).

As for the semantic system, Halliday (1970a, 1970b, 1973) recognizes three functional components of grammar; these are as follows:
1. The ideational: this component serves for the expression of 'content'. In other words, it tends to give the experience of the speaker as reflected in the real world. This also encompasses the inner world of the speaker's own consciousness. Two sub-components are subsumed in the ideational component: the 'experiential', which is mainly concerned with the expression of processes, participants, circumstances and qualities; and the 'logical' which provides for the linguistic expression of such universal relations as those of 'and', 'or', negation, etc.

2. The interpersonal: this component helps to describe language functions in terms of social values; it expresses social roles, including those of the speaker's comments, (i.e. one among the syntactic complexes which together make up the social role in language (Halliday 1970b: 355)). Such options are considered as facilitating devices for expressing the linguistic roles that can be occupied by the speaker in situations of communication. This is, of course, in addition to speech functions, statements, questions and answers, comments and exclamations, etc., which are taken to show how things are getting done through the social interaction among interlocutors (see Halliday 1968).

3. The textual: this component provides the speaker with the ability to construct coherent and connected stretches of discourse; these stretches should be contextually related.
It is the textual component that enables the reader/listener to distinguish a 'text' from a 'non-text' or a random sequence of sentences. Within this component, there is incorporation of meaning patterns; these patterns are realized outside language. The first pattern of meaning is 'information structure'. Here, there are two functional roles that are derived from this component and these are 'given' and 'new'. These represent a distribution of information into that which the speaker takes upon himself to be accessible to the hearer (i.e. GIVEN) and that which is being presented as new (i.e. NEW). The other pattern of meaning is that of 'thematic system'. This component incorporates the functional roles of 'theme' and 'rheme'. While 'theme' means 'what is being talked about, the point of departure for the clause as a message'. (Halliday 1985a: 38). 'rheme' constitutes the rest of the sentence/clause. Above all, the textual component incorporates cohesive devices and linking tools for creating a text; it also expresses the structure of information, and the relation of each part of the discourse to the whole and to the setting.

3.2 Relevance of the systemic model to the analysis

Following Halliday's systemic model, we see language as a set of networks. The speaker chooses what he will do from the choices of what he can do. The speaker also chooses what he will
mean from the choices of what he can mean. To evaluate or explain what the speaker does, one should understand what the speaker says in a particular situation and what he intends or is likely to do in that particular situation.

As for the relation of Halliday's systemic model to this study, it should be emphasized that this model is extremely important for the analysis of textual cohesion. The systemic model does not demand a high degree of idealization and is therefore suited to shedding light on the analysis of actual text-forms. As Williams (1982) points out, one can more easily relate 'can do' and 'does' than 'know' and 'does'. Besides, a systemic model accounts for grammatical structures in terms of the choices involved in using them. These choices can be directly related to the context and therefore enhance our ability to perceive things clearly and deeply on the semantic level.

Another aspect of the systemic model which is relevant is that it is flexible in terms of the choices available to the speaker and one can spell out the importance of these choices. These strata which express 'meaning potential', are referred to by Halliday as 'wording' and 'meaning'. According to Halliday & Hasan (1976), 'wording' refers to the lexico-grammatical form, the choice of words and grammatical structure (lexico-grammatical system). The term 'meaning' is a concept used to refer to the function of the whole text (Halliday 1959, 1961 and Halliday et al 1964); it covers contextual and formal meaning (Halliday 1959, 1961, 1964). It also refers to the component of the social action and symbolic representation of the structure of the social
action (Halliday 1975). Therefore, 'meaning potential' and functional components of grammar are basic to this study. Meaning potential is concerned with what the speaker intends when he utters a particular stretch of language. The functional components of grammar make up the stratum which links socio-semantic meaning to the surface structure. This stratum consists of three functional components of grammar which, Halliday argues, comprise the 'meaning potential' of the language. The grammar is organized along functional lines. Halliday (1970a, 1970b) claims that when one examines the 'meaning potential' of the language itself, one finds that the vast numbers of options embodied in it combine into a very few relatively independent "networks", and these networks of options correspond to certain basic functions of language. Halliday says:

"If we represent the set of options available to the speaker in the grammar of the English clause, these options group themselves into a small number of subsets, distinct from one another in that, while within each group of options, there is a very high degree of interdependence, between any two groups the amount of interdependence, though by no means negligible, is very much less. This provides a syntactic basis for the concept of language functions, and suggests how the diversity of functions recognizable at the semantic levels may be organized in the course of realization."

Halliday (1968: 207)

One may argue that although the functions themselves are semantic in origin, they are reflected in the grammar as blocks of options with very few connections between them.
Furthermore, the importance of functional components of grammar is to give insight into the semantic and social levels in which a particular text is used. While this study sheds some light on Halliday's three functional components of grammar, its main focus is on the textual component. This component will be used for the analysis of our texts. This includes the cohesive devices involved in the analysis which will be used as a means of identifying the semantic structure of editorials.

Within this component, Halliday (1974a) distinguishes different types of relations; he distinguishes relations of presupposition such as 'inference', 'substitution', etc. He also distinguishes 'reference' relations (e.g. anaphora, cataphora) between sentences and within sentences. All these types of relations will help us in analyzing our examined texts and finding out how Arabic argumentative discourse achieves textual cohesion. There are other cohesive devices that need to be illustrated, and these are investigated in the section that follows.

3.3 Halliday and Hasan's (1976) approach to cohesion

The study of cohesive devices or text-unifying characteristics is the focus of Halliday & Hasan's (1976) work. Cohesion is seen as a non-structural semantic relation, as for example, between a pronoun and its antecedent in a preceding sentence, expressing at each stage in the discourse the point of
context with what has gone before. A cohesive device is the interpretive link between, for example, a pronoun and its antecedent, or two lexically linked NPs, and a series of such ties (having the same referent) is referred to as a 'cohesive chain'.

In clarifying the notion of 'cohesion' and 'cohesive device', Halliday & Hasan present the following example:

"Wash and core six cooking apples. Put them into the fireproof dish."

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 1)

According to Halliday & Hasan, it is clear that them in the second sentence refers back to the six cooking apples in the first part of the example. This anaphoric function of them establishes a cohesive link between the first sentence and the second one and therefore gives cohesion to the text, so we can interpret these two sentences as a unified whole. The two sentences may constitute a text, or they may form part of a text, and there may be more of that text to follow. However, the cohesive tie between them and six cooking apples lies in the fact that they refer to the same thing. Thus, the two items are identified through 'reference'; they are co-referential.

In their approach to cohesion, Halliday & Hasan focus on the study of those cohesive devices which contribute, in a significant way, to the creation and interpretation of a connected stretch of languages as opposed to a non-cohesive
Halliday & Hasan believe that language must be approached as a unified and systematized whole; it cannot be looked at in terms of scattered words or sentences. To Halliday & Hasan, a text is any piece of language, spoken or written, that forms a unified whole; it is a semantic unit, and its creation is the actualization of meaning potential influenced by the situational parameters of 'field', 'mode', and 'tenor'. Halliday & Hasan argue that since native speakers of English are capable of deciding whether a stretch of language constitutes a text (i.e. has the property of texture), or not, there must be objective linguistic characteristics that differentiate between a 'text' and a 'non-text'. It is these objective linguistic characteristics that Halliday & Hasan set out to describe. These characteristics will help us analyze Arabic argumentative text-forms, (i.e. editorials), and indicate the different methods by which Arabic argumentative discourse achieves textuality.

Halliday & Hasan argue that cohesion is a matter of presupposition. Certain elements in discourse are dependent upon one another. This is very similar to Winter's (1977) view that clauses are completely dependent upon one another, and one clause therefore cannot be interpreted without reference to the other. According to Halliday & Hasan, cohesion:

"occurs where the interpretation of some element in the discourse is dependent on that of another. The one presupposes the other, in the sense that it cannot be effectively decoded except by recourse to it".

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 4)
Cohesion is not concerned primarily with the subject matter of a particular text, for example, nor only with the message of that text. Cohesion is mainly concerned with the organization of the message, and because of that, it forms part of the textual component of the semantic system. However, unlike other textual resources, (e.g. the thematic, theme-rheme) and information distribution (e.g. given-new), cohesion is regarded as a non-structural relation; that is, cohesive ties are not properties of any structural unit such as the clause or the sentence, but can occur either within or between sentences.

Within Halliday & Hasan's approach to cohesion, it is worth noting that the examples that have been used in this work are almost all of inter-sentential cohesion, because, as they demonstrate, cohesive devices between sentences stand out more clearly as they are the only source of texture, whereas within the sentence, there are structural relations as well. In this connection, Halliday & Hasan say:

"As a general rule, the examples cited in this book will be cohesion across sentence boundaries, since the effect is more striking and the meaning is more clearly because they are the ONLY source of texture."

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 9)

On the basis of an analysis of English literary texts, and the intuitions of native speakers of English, Halliday & Hasan recognize five categories of cohesion. These are 'reference',
'substitution', 'ellipsis', 'conjunction', and 'lexical' cohesion. These cohesive categories are illustrated as follows:

3.3.1 Reference

This cohesive device is mainly concerned with the use of pronominals, demonstratives, and comparatives. As Halliday & Hasan argue, it occurs where items instead of being interpreted semantically in their own right, make reference to something else for their interpretation. To illustrate this category, consider the following example:

(1) Three blind mice, three blind mice, see how they run! See how they run.

(2) Doctor Foster went to Gloucester in a shower of rain. He stepped in the puddle right up to his middle and never went there again.

(3) There were two wrens upon a tree. Another came, and there went three.

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 31)

From the examples stated above, it will be seen that in example (1), the pronoun they refers back to three blind mice. In example (2), the pronoun he, in the second part of the example, refers to Dr. Foster and the diectic form there, in the second part of the same example, refers to Gloucester. In the third example, the term another refers to wrena. This kind of information, that has to be retrieved for full interpretation in
this type of cohesion, is referred to as 'referential meaning', the identity of the particular thing or class of things that is being referred to. When the source of the necessary information is an item in the text itself, one is dealing with what is called endophora or 'endophoric reference'. When the source of the addition information is outside the text, in the context of situation, one is dealing with 'exophoric reference'.

'Endophoric reference' is divided into two types: first, anaphoric - when the information needed for the interpretation is in the preceding bit of text. Second, cataphoric - when the information needed for the interpretation is to be found in the part of the text that follows. Examples (1), (2), and (3) above display anaphoric reference. For cataphoric and exophoric reference, consider the following examples:

(4) This is how to get the best result. You let the berries dry in the sun till all the moisture has gone out of them. Then you gather them up and chop them very fine. (cataphoric reference)

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 17)

(5) For he's a jolly good fellow. And so say all of us. (exophoric reference)

Halliday & Hasan (1976: 32)

It is evident that in example (4), the term this refers forward to the following description; therefore, it is cataphoric, while in (5), the text does not make it clear who the
pronoun he refers to. However, the participants in the speech occasion will know this from the context in which the speech situation occurs; the information is outside the text and hence it is exophoric. The diagram that follows demonstrates clearly what Halliday & Hasan mean by the notion of 'reference':

![Diagram of reference types: exophora, endophora, cataphoric reference, anaphoric reference.](image)

3.3.2 Substitution

Substitution, being a cohesive relation and a process occurs within the text, is the replacement of one item by another. Substitution is a phenomenon which is confined to the text, and the substituted item and the item which it substitutes, have the same grammatical function.

In distinguishing between substitution and reference, Halliday and Hasan argue that substitution is a grammatical
phenomenon whereas reference is a semantic one. That is, substitution, as a relation between linguistic items such as words and phrases, is a relation at the lexicogrammatical level, the level of grammar and vocabulary, whereas reference is a relation on the semantic level. Also, according to Halliday and Hasan, ellipsis is a kind of substitution; this kind of substitution is defined as substitution by zero. The representation of these cohesive relations is shown below:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of cohesive relation</th>
<th>Linguistic level</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Reference</td>
<td>semantic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Substitution</td>
<td>grammatical</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ellipsis = substitution by zero</td>
<td>grammatical</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Diagram (11)
Representation of cohesive relations

While substitution encompasses the use of nominal substitutes such as the same and one(s), it can also be via pronominal type elements (e.g. do, so, etc.). The difference is that these type elements are not co-referential as pronouns are. The following examples illustrate Halliday and Hasan's three types of substitution:
3.3.3 Ellipsis

The phenomenon of ellipsis is very closely related to the relation of 'substitution'. Ellipsis is seen as that form of substitution in which the item is replaced by (0). It is a term which is used to denote the lack of repetition of one or more items that have already been mentioned before; reference to such items is implied and, according to Halliday & Hasan, is understood, because ellipted elements are expected to be retrievable by the addressee from the preceding linguistic context. As in the case of substitution, Halliday & Hasan recognize three types of ellipsis. These are: nominal, verbal, and clausal. These three types are exemplified in my own following examples. The ellipted items are indicated by (0).

(1) Adam and Amy got back at noon.
Both (0) were very tired. (Nominal)

(2) Wally has already agreed.
Gayle has not (0) yet. (Verbal)

(3) Would you like a cup of coffee?
No (0) for God's sake. (Clausal)
Halliday & Hasan argue that ellipsis is not only determined completely by incomplete structure (i.e. some individual elements of structure are omitted), but also it is signalled by a particular context. Halliday & Hasan exemplify this case as follows:

(4)  
a. Yesterday we went on the river.  
We had dinner out too.

b. Can you read the print without your glasses?  
No, but I can look at the pictures.

In example (4), the second sentence in (a) has the time reference to yesterday and the response in (b) has a manner reference to without my glasses. The sentences merely imply here in particular context in which they occur, the particular time manner, etc., referred to in the preceding sentence. Accordingly, the response in (4b) would imply 'I can look at the pictures without my glasses'. This sentence has been recovered by reference to the context.

3.3.4 Conjunctions

This kind of cohesive relation is different from the others in that conjunctive elements are only cohesive by virtue of their specific meanings. Unlike other cohesive devices, conjunctive elements are not primarily devices for reaching out into what comes before and what comes after, but they express certain
meanings which presuppose the presence of other components in the text.

In terms of surface structure, conjunctions are a diverse group, including not only the numbers of the form class of conjunctions, but also simple and compound adverbs, and prepositional expressions as in as a result of that and in addition, etc. These kinds of cohesive devices will shed light on the way clause relations in Arabic are signalled, and how meaning is manifested through them. Halliday & Hasan distinguish four basic types of conjunctions: 'additive', 'adversative', 'causal', and 'temporal'. The following examples, which are my own, illustrate these types; the conjunctive expressions are underlined.

(1) He was sick and had a mental illness, so he had to stay at home. (Additive)
(2) He worked very hard. Yet he could not maintain his job. (Adversative)
(3) He did not cooperate this time, so he will have to leave. (Causal)
(4) First, he forgot his friends, then he forgot his mind. (Temporal)

Conjunctions are regarded as important devices that contribute to the cohesion of the text; they do not only connect sentences or parts of a sentence together, but they also signal other kinds of clause relations. While there is an interest in explaining Halliday & Hasan's types of clause relations and signalling devices, the study will not use such devices for the
analysis of our examined argumentative text-forms. This is due to the fact that Halliday & Hasan's categorization is too general. Therefore, this study will use Beekman & Callow's categorization of signalling devices as well as the types of clause relations because of their exhaustiveness and comprehensibility.

It should be pointed out here that conjunctive elements lie within the textual process, and part of the reason at least why conjunctions function as 'textual ties' is that they relate the events referred to conceptually. These logical and textual aspects are not, therefore, fully distinct. Conjunctive cohesion also serves to relate sentences to each other in various types of logical relations. Fawcett (1980) argues that this kind of cohesive relation should be included as another aspect of the logical component, which he calls "supplementary linkage", this type of linkage occurs alongside paratactic and hypotactic constructions.

3.3.5 **Lexical cohesion**

Lexical cohesion is achieved via the relationship between lexical items that are identical, or items that are related semantically. According to Halliday & Hasan, there are five types of lexical cohesion. These are: 'the same item', 'synonymy or near-synonymy', 'superordinate', 'general word', and 'collocation'. These sub-types are exemplified as follows:

(1) There is a boy climbing the tree. The boy's going to fall if he does not take care. (Same item)
(2) The lad's going to fall if he does not take care. (Synonymy or near synonymy)

(3) The child's going to fall if he does not take care. (Superordinate)

(4) The idiot's going to fall if he does not take care. (General word)

(5) Why does this little boy wriggle all the time. Girls don't wriggle. (Collocation)

As demonstrated by Halliday & Hasan, in (1), the 'same item' 'boy' is repeated. In (2), the item 'lad' is used; this is an example of the category 'synonymy' or 'near synonymy'. In sentence (3), the item 'child' is used and therefore expresses the category 'superordinate'. In (4), the item 'idiot' is used as a 'general word'; and finally in (5), the item 'boy and girl' are used as the two words have a collocational interaction between them. Collocation is achieved through the association of lexical items that regularly co-occur, such as dollar-cent, north-south, red-green, etc. All these items are associated with each other as they occur within the same environment (they collocate). Also, the items have similar patterns of collocation. That is, they tend to appear in similar contexts, and because they do so, they generate a cohesive force when they occur in adjacent sentences.

It seems clear that Halliday & Hasan's description and classification of the 'collocation' category is messy, and the reader can easily confuse one class with another. This category is very vague, and is too general in terms of what collocates with what. For example, if one can relate the items 'sit', 'sit down'; and 'sit up', to each other because they are realized by the same lexical item 'sit', it would be hard to decide whether
or not 'sit up' and 'stand up' are lexically related because of repetition of the lexical item 'up'. In terms of Halliday & Hasan's approach, this category poses many problems and therefore requires some clarification. Such clarification is presented in Hasan's (1979, 1983) modification of the 'lexical cohesion category' (i.e. see 3.4).

Before we go into this modification, it should be noted that Halliday & Hasan's approach has both advantages and disadvantages. The advantages derive from the abstraction of patterns of cohesion from a text. For example, within the cohesive category 'reference', the discourse analyst can easily see - when the cohesive ties and chains have been plotted - whether a particular text is cohesively bound or whether the text is loosely or tightly cohesive. This will be seen in our Arabic argumentative editorials which will be presented in Chapter (5). This chapter will also show what kinds of semantic relations occur within the structure of texts. The category 'reference' will also be a key part of our analysis of the texts; we shall attempt to see whether the constituents of an Arabic argumentative text-form (editorials) are linked together or not, and how such linking affects its textual occurrence. In addition, the examination of cohesive chains will allow us to see how this kind of discourse is structured and how it is organized.

In terms of the disadvantages of in Halliday & Hasan's approach, I believe that Halliday & Hasan treat the cohesive device 'conjunction' as basically cohesive in the same sense as the other four cohesive devices. It is true that 'conjunctions' do link the clauses they introduce with what has come before, but
the way conjunctions connect what follows with what has preceded is completely different from the other cohesive devices. That is, conjunctions do not create links whereas other types of cohesion do. One should be reminded that within the cohesive categories 'reference', 'substitution', 'ellipsis' and 'lexical cohesion', the cohesive devices occur because the addressee/listener has used some information from the previous discourse to interpret an item, whereas in the case of conjunctions, the reader/listener does not do this. This, according to Winter, is also true of clause relations, although perhaps not of the connectors themselves.

Within Halliday & Hasan's approach, there are other problems that have been raised by Dressler (1978), Morgan and Sellner (1980), and Brown & Yule (1983). Within the use of the cohesive category 'reference', Halliday & Hasan use the term in 'a specific sense' (ibid: 31) when they talk about items not having their own semantic interpretation, but being dependent on 'reference' to something else for the interpretation. Morgan and Sellner (1980) give the following example:

Wash and core six cooking apples.
Put them into a fireproof dish.

In this example, 'them' does not refer back to something that has gone before, it is rather used by the speaker to refer to 'six cooking apples' outside the linguistic context, not to the phrase 'six cooking apples' stated in the example. Also, Morgan & Sellner attempt to demonstrate the fact that reference,
generally speaking, is defined as a relationship between a linguistic expression and an entity outside language. However, Williams (1989) defends Halliday & Hasan's approach by saying that while this may be true, Brown and Yule would not argue that there is a lack of continuity. There will be something incomplete or even incoherent about the following text:

Burn the leaves in an incinerator.
Then spread them on the lawn.

Williams argues here:

"It would be more natural to replace the pronoun them with 'the ash' as the leaves have so lost their leafiness as to need redefining."

Williams (1989: 45)

The distinction between endophora and exophora made by Halliday & Hasan also raises some problematic issues; these issues are raised by Brown & Yule (1983). Halliday & Hasan argue that, in the case of endophora, the reader has to search back in the text in order to recognize the identity of the referent. Brown & Yule observe that it is illogical to assume that the reader is able to reconstruct the exact form of the same occurrence, when one interprets an item far into the text. Brown & Yule suggest that instead of reconstructing the exact form of the first occurrence, the reader establishes a referent in his own mental representation of the discourse and relates subsequent references to that referent back to his mental representation.
In the case of endophora, the mental representation would be a representation of the world created by the text, whereas in the case of exophora, it would be a representation of the world outside discourse. In both cases the speaker must relate the item to something outside language. This makes the endophora/exophora distinction very blurred. However, Brown & Yule recognize that Halliday & Hasan stress the dynamic nature of the text and its creation. For example, in their discussion of the ways in which lexical relatedness contribute to cohesion, Brown & Yule also raise another question of whether the reader needs overtly realized cohesive devices in order to interpret the text. According to Halliday & Hasan, overt cohesive devices are basic for the interpretation of a text; they believe that a text cannot be interpreted without such devices. However, Brown & Yule believe that this is not the case, because there are examples where the text is coherent and cohesive even without the overtly realized cohesive devices. Brown & Yule exemplify this point as follows:

Thank you for your comment about voicing. I will get back to that lesson.

In addition, according to Brown & Yule, overtly marked cohesion is no guarantee that a passage will be interpreted as a coherent text. They believe that texts are what hearers and readers treat as texts, and when one tries to interpret a massage in a text, he will try to build a coherent picture of the series of events being described and fit these events together, rather than work with verbal connections alone.
It is easy to understand why Halliday & Hasan's approach to cohesion poses many problems, and at the same time it is easy to understand the positions of Morgan & Sellner and Brown & Yule. However, one can perhaps resolve this issue to some extent by saying that Halliday & Hasan were mainly concerned with description and not with explanation. This point has been made by Dressler (1978) who says that Halliday & Hasan's work is almost all expository, with little explanation and little recourse to ill-formed examples. Halliday & Hasan's notion of lexical cohesion also has great explanatory value. However, as stated earlier, the notion of lexical cohesion (i.e collocation) also raises some problems, and these problems are reexamined below by Hasan (1979, 1983).

3.4 Hasan's (1983) modification of the lexical cohesion category

Hasan's (1983) work is regarded as a revision of Halliday & Hasan's (1976) work on the category of lexical cohesion. Hasan introduces new categories and elaborates on some of the categories that have been established in the (1976) model; she also excludes the category of "collocation" from her study. Before introducing the new revision, we need to investigate the main reasons behind this modification. Hasan says:

"The triumphs of modern linguistics are more noticeable in the realms of grammar and phonology; by comparison, lexis is a neglected area. Despite suggestive leads from different
approaches (Firth, 1957; Halliday (1966; Sinclair, 1966; Bendix, 1966; Fillmore, 1971), the categories for the description of lexis are no more than a shot in the dark. This has the consequence of creating problems of decision making at every step in the analysis. For example, can it be assumed that word and lexical token are coextensive? If so, how do sit, sit down and sit up relate to each other? Is up in sit up and stand up a realization of the same lexical category? Indeed, is it valid to use the term lexical category in relation to the traditionally "empty" words, up, down, in out, on and at? And most basic of all, what are the ways in which a lexical category may be realized? Are bachelor and unmarried human adult male alternative realizations of the same lexical category?"

(Hasan, 1983: 194)

According to Hasan, problems such as these stated in the quote are difficult to resolve and they affect the analysis of lexical cohesion at every stage. Hasan insists that any researcher, no matter what his or her views on cohesion and coherence are, meets these problems in the course of his or her analysis. Hasan illustrates the semantic complexity of the lexical cohesion category by the following examples:

A10 1. (there was) there was once a little girl and a little boy and a dog
2. and the sailor was their daddy
3. and the little doggy was white
4. and they liked the little doggy
5. and they stroke it
6. and they fed it
7. and he run away
8. and then (um the little dog) daddy (um) had to go on a ship
9. and the children missed 'em
10. and they began to cry

129
A11 1. there was a girl and a boy
   2. there was a dog and a sailor
   3. the dog was a furry dog
   4. and the girl and the boy were sitting down
   5. and the sailor was standing up
   6. and the teddy-bear was lying down asleep
   7. and the sailor was looking at (the dog) the bear
   8. the little girl was laying down too
   9. she wasn’t asleep
 10. and the boy was sitting up
 11. he was looking at the bear too

A13 1. once upon a time (there was two little)
   there was a little girl and a boy
 2. and they went aboard a ship
 3. and the sailor said to them to go
   and find a carriage
 4. don’t go on the ship here because
    I’m trying to dive
 5. but the dog came along
 6. and threw himself into the sea
 7. and then he came back
 8. and (all) they went home
 9. and had a party
10. and they lived happily ever after

Within Hasan’s study of coherence, the counting of ties
poses serious problems for the analysis of lexical cohesion.
Hasan exemplifies this by saying that repetition leads to the
creation of a tie, as does collocation. When we examine examples
(3)-(8) in table (A13), it is very hard to decide whether there
are four or five ties. Hasan argues that no matter what the
answer is, there are three ties of repetition. These ties are
represented as follows:

    go 2 _____ go 4
    go 2 _____ go 8
    come _____ 7
There are also two ties of collocation between 'come' and 'go'.

These are represented as follows:

\[
\text{come 5} \quad \text{go 4} \\
\text{come 7} \quad \text{go 8}
\]

According to Hasan, the problem arises from the fact that reiteration and collocation belong to two different dimensions. In this connection, Hasan says:

"Tokens may enter into these relations at one and the same time, so that it is possible, if one wishes, to count them as constituting ties both through the relation of reiteration and that of collocation."

Hasan (1983: 195)

As a result, the notion of collocation is problematic; on what grounds does one accept or reject the claim when one is confronted with collocational ties between dive (4) and sea (6) in (A13). In addition, the 1976 model of lexical cohesion does not take certain semantic bonds into account. An example of this is the relation of equivalence between sailor and the children's daddy in (A10). Accordingly, this leads Hasan to a modification of the lexical categories of cohesion. In her revision, Hasan lists the following general lexical cohesive categories:

1. repetition: e.g. leave - leaving 
2. synonymy: e.g. leave - depart
3. antonymy: e.g. leave - arrive
4. hyponymy (including co-hyponymy): travel - leave
5. meronymy (including co-meronymy): dollar - cent
   hand - finger, and finger - thumb.

Hasan also lists other instantial types of lexical cohesion: 'equivalence' (i.e. the sailor was their daddy); naming (i.e. he was named), and 'semblance' (i.e. the deck was like a pool).

The difference between general and instantial lexical cohesion is that the former is text independent whereas the latter is text dependent. That is, instantial lexical relations are text-bound, and the validity of such relations lies within the text. Thus instantial lexical relations attain their validity not from the lexical system as a whole but from and through the linguistic context of that utterance.

Another basic difference between the 1976 model and that of Hasan (1983) is that the latter recognizes the differences between similarity and difference, and including and included. These relations are included in the 1976 model under synonymy and superordinate. The category of collocation is excluded on account of its lack of clarity and elusive character.

Further modification in Hasan's 1983 work includes the study of Identity Chains (IC's) and Similarity Chains (SC's). These chains are extremely important for signalling unity and connectedness within the text. However, before going any further, one needs to define and clarify the concepts of 'chain',
'identity' and 'similarity' chains. The definition of each cohesive tie is presented below.

3.4.1 Definition of chain

From a textual point of view, a chain can be defined as a connected, flexible series of links that has the power of binding, connecting and relating items to each other. It is a thread of continuity running through the whole text (Hasan 1983, 1985). Hasan points out that a chain is formed by a set of items each of which is related to the others in terms of semantic relations. These semantic relations are co-referentiality, co-classification, and co-extension. Such semantic relations describe the operation of many cohesive chains, each of which delimits the field of meaning for the others.

Taking this type of relation into consideration, we can subcategorize chains into two types: identity chains and similarity chains. These chains will be defined in the following subsections.

3.4.1.1 Identity chain

The identity chain is a chain that has to do with co-referentiality. That is, every member of a chain refers to the same thing, event, attribute or relation. For example, Adam and he (if he refers to Adam, rather than anyone else) form an identity chain, since the relationship between these two items is
that of co-reference. As Hasan (1979, 1983) points out, identity chains can be realized by devices of reference such as pronominals (i.e. he, she, it, etc.), and demonstratives (i.e. this, these, etc.). The relation of co-referentiality can also be realized by other devices such as comparatives. Typically, however, co-referentiality is realized by devices of reference. This notion of co-referentiality can be developed further. As Hasan argues, items such as 'I', 'my', and 'me' make an identity chain, if and only if each item in the chain refers to the same person. If this criterion is fulfilled, then all of these variants of the first person singular pronoun will form but one identity chain.

3.4.1.2 Similarity chain

The similarity chain is a chain that has to do with either co-classification or co-extension. In this chain, members are related to each other by the above two categories: co-classification (i.e. repetition of the same item), and co-extension (i.e. any other cohesive device stated in the later model). In co-classification relations, Hasan argues that things and processes, to which two members refer, belong to an identical class, whereas in co-extension, the two members refer to something within the same general field of meaning.

The number of identity and similarity chains indicates the coherence of the text, as well as the number of tokens embodied in such chains. Hasan suggests that another indication of the
coherence of a text is the interaction of chains, in which identity chains (IC's) and similarity chains (SC's) are in a constant semantic relationship with one another. The IC's and SC's utilize certain tokens, and these tokens are called 'relevant tokens' (RT). Relevant tokens (RT), those which enter into identity and similarity chains, are divided into: central tokens, (i.e. relevant tokens that interact); non-central tokens (NCT) which are tokens that do not interact; and peripheral tokens (PT) which are the tokens that fall outside chains and do not enter into any kind of chain. For more information on these tokens, see Halliday & Hasan (1985). The processes of interaction which appear to be in a constant ideational relationship are called central tokens (CT). All these tokens play an important role in the unity and coherence of the text.

It should be emphasized at this stage that identity and similarity chains will be relevant to our textual analysis. In this analysis, these chains will shed light on whether Arabic argumentative text-forms are cohesive or not, and how such chains-including tokens-contribute to the connectedness of the text.

3.5 Koch's (1982) approach to cohesion in Arabic

Unlike Winter (1977), Koch distinguishes between the semantic and formal aspects of cohesion. According to Koch, formal parallelism should be divorced from semantic parallelism.
This distinction is valuable to her work and based on a Saussurean notion. Looking at the development of language, Koch says:

"In particular, there are two things about De Saussure's discussion which will be important in this discussion and which need to be underlined again, even at the risk of repetition. The first is the elasticity of the associative axis of language. For De Saussure, associative relations are not simply relations of this kind. Associative relations can be relations of semantic cognition or morphological or phonological similarity as well as relations based on similarity of syntactic function. The second key feature of De Saussure's discussion is the dialectical interplay between the two axes of language in discourse. This is the idea that syntagmatic and associative relationships depend on one another and continually create and destroy one another in the flow of discourse."

Koch (1982: 16-17)

According to Koch, two relations have to be investigated: paradigmatic relations in which one item is substitutable by another and syntagmatic relations which are represented by the a string of constituents. There is a constant interaction between syntagmatic and paradigmatic relations. Koch argues that in Arabic, for example, words are almost always used in a paradigmatic form in a repeated frame; each one of these words becoming, in one way or another, a paradigm of another.

Koch argues that parallelism can be used as a structuring device of discourse. This is contrary to the studies which succeeded De Saussure, the main concern of which was to consider parallelism only as a structure and not as a process of
organizing or structuring of texts. According to Koch, parallelism is not a matter of embellishment, nor is it a static structure; rather, it is an important means of structuring discourse. The text-producer uses these devices to show how already used structure is reused for the purpose of emphasis, creating a rhetorical effect on the reader. Clarifying the notion of Parallelism in Arabic, Koch says:

"Parallelism is always hierarchical; it always involves repetition on the higher level, and the evocation and creation of paradigmatic structure on the lower level. To say that two linguistic structures are parallel is to say that they share a common structural frame, and that within this frame, some element or elements differ in form. What is, on the face of it, most curious, is that the elements that differ always stand in a close relationship to one another. They can be phonological, morphological, register, or dialect variants, synonyms or antonyms, metaphorical versions of one another, or any of a number of other things. It is, in fact, very difficult to specify how the elements are related, although, especially in the case of dyadic couplets, considerable efforts have been made to do so. Most generally, they are members of the same linguistic subsystem, or paradigm. The two (or more) differing elements in repeated frames evoke the paradigm of which they are both (or all) members. And a crucial corollary of this observation is this: the fact that the differing elements in parallel structures are members of the same paradigm is not accidental; parallelism is precisely the way paradigms are created. Elements which are members of the class of "things that differ in a repeated frame" are interpreted by readers and listeners as also being members of a common higher level class, or paradigm, of some kind."

Koch (1982: 49-50)
There are other aspects that have been investigated in Koch's descriptive thesis; some of these aspects are the use of synonym couplets, 'root and pattern paradigm'. These aspects illustrate the process by which any argumentative discourse is structured and organized. Above all, they illustrate the cyclical process within argumentative discourse.

In addition, Repetition is a basic feature of argumentative structure, and therefore needs to be investigated in terms of Koch's thesis. According to Koch, repetition at the clause level is of two kinds: repetition of content, which she calls 'paraphrase' and repetition of form, which she calls 'parallelism'. These devices are similarly explained by De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981). Repetition of content (paraphrase), is basic in argumentative texts because it presents the base of the argument and establishes the relationships between the argument and other elements involved. Repetition of form (parallelism), is also an important aspect of argumentative texts; its function is to provide evidence or some kind of justification for the argument.

Koch points out that in Arabic, the use of repetition shows the constant manipulation of parallelism. Parallelism is used to create new classes and persuade the addressee by the degree of repetition. Unlike English, Arabic argumentative texts rely heavily on the use of repetition for the purpose of persuasion; they do not rely, as the English texts do, on syllogistic and logical presentation. While this proves to be partially true, Koch makes some linguistic judgements for which there is little
evidence. For example, she argues that Arabic argumentation is persuasive because of its repeated presentation of the same idea over and over again and 'not the logical structure'. While this may partially be true, we actually wonder, taking into account the lack of clarification of what 'logical structure' means, how such repeated presentation tends to persuade without being conveyed through a logical structure. Also, Koch's study is based on the description of texts in which time, place, occasions, situations and audience, under which the texts were produced, have not been considered. Despite these shortcomings, it should be pointed out that the amount and the type of data used by Koch were more comprehensive than those of Kaplan, and therefore one would expect that the generalizations she has made may well be applicable to the texts she has dealt with as well as the Arabic language as a whole.

One may agree with Koch as well as with Kaplan (1966), that the Semitic languages, of which Arabic is one, tend to expand the paragraph as the basis of parallel construction and their work or analyses on the use of repetition and parallelism are important for this thesis. For the investigation of repetition and parallelism, Koch’s approach will be used to analyze these two textual phenomena; this approach will demonstrate the way the intended argumentative text-form (i.e. editorials) is structured and how it is organized cohesively.
3.6 Summary

In the preceding sections, we have investigated the study of cohesion undertaken by Halliday & Hasan (1976). We have also investigated the modification of the lexical cohesion categories set out in Hasan's (1983) work. We have seen that Halliday & Hasan view language as a series of sentences connected by means of a number of cohesive devices, and that these cohesive devices in connected sequences form a semantic unity. Between sentences, Halliday & Hasan argue that there are no structural links; structural links exist not above the sentence but within the sentence. Halliday & Hasan investigate the role these cohesive devices play in discourse; they show that such devices are important for creating 'texture'.

We have also seen that 'texture' expresses the property of being a text. It is a meaning relation between the parts of the text. 'Text' is called 'text' because it has 'texture'. 'Texture' distinguishes between 'text' and 'non-text'. 'Text' derives its texture from the fact that it functions as a unity with respect to its environment (Halliday & Hasan 1976: 2).

It has been demonstrated that structure is a property of language; it is a property of texts as well as sentences. Structure is an important source for the creation of unity; it is an expression of the unity of the social process as well as an event. Structure is an ordered arrangement of elements in chain relations. Above all, like 'texture', structure is a unifying
relation. Thus, structure lies within sentences as well as within texts; however, one expects the kind of relations between sentences to be different from those between texts.

In defining a text, Halliday & Hasan suggest that a text is a sum of units of meaning—sentences or clauses; the relation between these units gives the text its meaning. Therefore, text is not a structural unit, but a semantic one which functions in a context (Halliday 1959, 1977).

The preceding sections have also demonstrated the semantic relations that will be found in our editorials; this is one of the main focuses of this thesis. At the same time, our interest is not only in explicit semantic relations or cohesive devices, but also in implicit ones, as well as other structures such as paraphrase and parallelism. All these semantic relations will be used as tools to analyze our argumentative text-forms (editorials).
4.0 Introduction

In the last chapter, an attempt was made to investigate the notion of cohesion in Arabic as well as in English. This attempt has been made to discover the ways in which texts are structured and organized. This chapter attempts to give an account of the means and methods used in the analysis and to describe the particular type of discourse this study deals with; it presents the source of my data and the reasons behind its selection. To this end, this chapter is divided into seven sections. Section (1) describes the source of my text-forms; it describes the spring from which my corpus has been taken. Section (2) identifies the text-form under discussion and the reasons behind its selection. Following this is Section (3) which defines the minimum unit used in the analysis; it also explains the main reasons behind the choice of this analytical unit, and why the sentence unit poses some problems in Arabic which makes it unsuitable for the purposes of this study.

Section (4) indicates the approach (i.e. means and methods) that will be employed for the analysis of the selected text-forms. It also indicates the process by which this analysis is carried out. Section (5) facilitates this study by introducing a
'rank and indentation system'. This system is utilized to show diagrammatically the way in which clauses are arranged. That is, how close the relationship between one clause and another is, and what function this system performs for this type of analysis. Section (6) presents the list of clause relations adopted for this study; it demonstrates why other lists of clause relations (e.g. Winter, 1977) do not suit the purpose of this thesis. Section (7) identifies our approach to cohesion (i.e. lexical cohesion, identity and similarity chains, types of processes, parallelism, etc.) This section demonstrate how editorials achieve textual coherence and how this phenomenon plays a significant role for the text-receiver. All these issues will be investigated respectively in the following sections.

4.1 Source of data

The data for this study will be taken from three different Arabic newspapers. These newspapers have more or less the same political, social and cultural positions. The first newspaper is Al- Ra'y, a Jordanian newspaper. The second newspaper is Al-Watan, a Kuwaiti newspaper. The third one is Al-Ahrām, an Egyptian newspaper.

From these three newspapers, samples were taken randomly to achieve more generalizable results. Articles written in different times, but within the same decade, were chosen for this study to ensure comprehensibility. These articles evolve around political and social issues of the interest in the country in
which the newspaper appears. The articles I have used for this study are typical of editorials as a whole and the sample I have analyzed throughout this thesis is also typical of the text-forms I have chosen as a whole. The emphasis on the text-forms used as well as the text-forms in the appendices is based on the fact that these text-forms display explicit and wide manifestations of meaning through which their generic structure and type of clause relations can be easily demonstrated.

Even though the analysis has been done on the basis of the analysis of almost forty editorials, only twenty-one editorial text-forms were subjected to this analysis. The restriction of this analysis to only 21 editorials does not, in any way, affect the result of this study as the analysis of the excluded text-forms has proven to display the same structure, and the validity of this study does not really rest on the quantity as much as the quality of the data analyzed.

As for the place of these editorials, they are taken from the same place in which they appear in the newspaper. For example, in Al-Ahrām, the editorial text-form almost always appears on the sixth page. In Al-Raʿy, it appears always on the first page, and in Al-Watan, the editorial text-form always appears also on the first page. Editorials are normally written by the editor and not by more than one person or committee. It is the basic objective of this thesis to investigate these unsigned text-forms and explain the meanings of the connections and the main constituents of the argumentative discourse used, and the problems they raise for translation as well as for interpretation.
Before we move on to the next section which introduces the reasons behind the selection of these text-forms, it should be pointed out that one of the limitations of this study is that it excludes other text-forms such as signed articles, brochures or pamphlets. Such text-forms are excluded as they may appear in different places and have different purposes.

4.2 Selection of editorials

The text-forms that are subjected to this kind of analysis are argumentative. This study therefore investigates the argumentative text-type in general and the 'editorial' as an argumentative text-form in particular.

It should be pointed out that giving a complete and adequate definition of an editorial is an important objective of this thesis. But unfortunately, from the Arabic sources I have looked at, a complete and adequate definition is far from being found. Here is an example demonstrating this point:

*Editorial: taḥrīriy, maqālah raʾīsiyyah fi majallah
talrIriy, maqlah ra'isiyyah fi majallah
editorializing, article main in magazine

aw ṣāḥifah, iftitḥābiyyah.
or newspaper, leading article.

The above definition does not really specify what is an editorial. It does not even state the purpose for which the

article is written. This is found in most of the Arabic sources. Because of this drawback (i.e. lack of finding a complete and adequate definition) a personal definition will be given instead which is based on different types of reading - Arabic or English. To this effect, editorials will be treated here as statements of opinions (Dijk 1989); they are text-forms written to be read and not to be spoken. Editorials tend to appear in a fixed position, and like many other argumentative text-forms, they are the product of a specific cultural environment. Editorials are normally written by the editor - not by more than one person or by a board of committee. Editorials express the point of view of the newspaper within the community in which it appears. All these observations tend to give editorials their essential situational characteristics and establish their unequivocal significance within argumentation.

The reason behind the choice of editorials, particularly from a translator's point of view, is that the ways and means languages use to present their own argumentative discourse are different (Kaplan 1966, 1983; Koch 1982, 1983). This study therefore examines the way the Arabic language presents its argumentative discourse; it also examines Koch's claim that Arabic persuades by 'weight of presentation' (Koch, 1982, 1983). This examination aims at finding out whether different methods of persuading may stem from the social background or the linguistic system in which a language is used.
It is worth noting here that while one of the main objective of argumentation is to persuade, argumentation is different from persuasion in the fact that argumentation is the presentation and elaboration of an argument and that is through reasoning, while persuasion is a psychological state which is mainly concerned with actions.

Furthermore, the study examines whether claims by Kaplan and Koch coincide with those of Al-Khafajiy (1982: 49-50) when he suggests that when the Arabic language is translated into another language, it tends to lose its comprehensibility and effectiveness, but when other languages are translated into Arabic, they gain more effectiveness. Al-Khafajiy ascribes this to linguistic factors. Arabic has a rich vocabulary system and it can easily accommodate other languages, as the linguistic system is wide enough to cover all different kinds of meaning in the other languages. This point has also been reinforced by Justice (1987) who suggests that there is a lexical richness in the Arabic language. Justice demonstrates this by giving the example 'Arm'; he notes that lexical expressions like this are a problem for the non-native learner of the Arabic language, as the above lexical expression can have many different possible translations such as sāćid, dirāf, cādud, zīnd, etc.

Justice presents many different examples demonstrating this point. By contrast, many other languages have a relatively limited system of vocabulary and cannot therefore accommodate the Arabic language. These problems become particularly acute within the discourse of argumentation. Argumentative texts are culture-
bound (Longacre 1974c, 1983), so that arguments are presented differently from one language to another. Arguments are shaped by the culture and social conventions of a particular community. Thus, editorials as an argumentative text-form are not ambiguous or vague to the native speaker of Arabic, but when translated literally, they acquire different and sometimes odd meanings for the English reader. This oddity stems from the factors stated above, in addition to the fact that, as Kaplan suggests, a native speaker of a particular language, Arabic for example, employs linguistic patterns, a rhetoric and a sequence of thought which are different from those of other languages, and this violates the expectations of the foreign reader.

Another reason behind the choice of this form of argumentative discourse is the complexity and the range of the subject-matter offered in this form of argumentation. There is a great variety of linguistic phenomena offered in editorials. For example, one tends to find stretches of expository, narrative, descriptive, and argumentative passages. However, despite this diversity, and because evaluativeness predominates, editorials tend to be dominated by argumentative passages. These passages constitute the central core of editorials. All these observations will be investigated through a structural, semantic-pragmatic and translational study of the text-form under discussion.
4.3 Minimum unit of analysis

Having identified the source of my corpus and presented the reasons behind the choice of these text-forms, the next thing to do is to select a unit for the analysis. The best-known analytical unit for splitting the text is that of the sentence*. While this causes no problems in English, I have reason to believe that this does cause problems in Arabic, as Arabic does not have capital letters in addition to the fact that Arabic contains among its constituents many adverbial clauses which in turn makes it very hard to draw the line between what a sentence or a clause is. Some linguists (e.g. Williams 1982, 1989) have attempted to analyze Arabic textually but were confronted with the difficulty of defining or delimiting the sentence in Arabic. For example, the following sentence, which is translated literally from a punctuation point of view, demonstrates this point:

(16) wa ziýadatu al-sukkáni fi ġaddi dátiha cāmilun
and increase the-population in limit itself factor

Ijábiy min cawāmilí al-qiýās fi quwati
positive from factors the-measuring in power

al-dawlah, (17) fa al-mawridu al-bašariy yakādu yakūnu
the-state as the-source the-human almost be

ahhamma mağađiri al-tanmiyah (18) idā aḥsannā
more important sources the-development if make-good-we

* Since we are dealing solely with written texts, it is sufficient to characterize a sentence, at least in a language like English, as a group of words which starts with a capital letter and ends with a full-stop.
The increase of population could of itself be a positive factor in determining the strength of the country, (17) since human resources are almost the most important reservoir for development, (18) if were to be invested properly in exploiting all natural resources of the country, (19) or even if were to be invested in the innovative work creating complementary industrial
resources, (20) and this is the basis on which to build (21) to utilize the country's vast resources in terms of 'land area', with its wealth of mineral and farmland, and to develop the industrial and commercial growth in the consumer and the export sectors, together with military and technological capabilities, (22) it is also an essential factor for moral achievement politically, socially, and culturally.

It can be easily seen that the above sentence is very long. There are many coordinated clauses introduced in this example; these clauses are connected simply by *wa* and *fa*. As Beeston (1970: 97) argues, *wa* and *fa* are ambivalent; that is, they have the characteristic of indecisiveness in that the function of each one of these conjunctions is not really fixed. Despite all efforts, even in English, there is no agreement as to what is the best way of defining a sentence. All that has been done so far is to define the sentence through different procedures. Some (e.g. Lyons 1968) define it in semantic terms; some (e.g. Chomsky 1957) define it in syntactic terms; and others (e.g. Winter 1982) define it in terms of the punctuation system. This shows that the notion "sentence" has been interpreted in many different ways (see Lyons, 1968: Ch.5). Therefore, if the sentence in English has not yet been delimited, no one would be surprised that the delimitation and demarcation of the sentence in Arabic is far from being decided.

To avoid the possibility of falling into the difficulty of the delimitation and demarcation of the Arabic sentence, this study will adopt a different unit for the analysis. This unit is the clause. According to Halliday (1961, 1973, 1985a), the term
'clause' is used to refer to any number of word groups combining to express a 'process', relating either explicitly or implicitly, an 'agent' and an 'affected' (see also Halliday 1973: 40). Clauses can be defining and non-defining. Defining relative clauses and noun clauses functioning as subjects and complements of relational processes will not be analyzed but would be regarded as part of the containing clause; while non-defining relative clauses and noun clauses functioning as complements of verbal processes will be analyzed separately. The only aspect on which we differ from Halliday is in distinguishing between adverbial clauses which are to be regarded as rankshifted and functioning as adverbial groups within the containing clause and those adverbial clauses which are to be regarded as non-rankshifted; Halliday, on the other hand, insists on regarding all adverbial clauses as non-rankshifted. We make our distinction on the basis that rankshifted adverbial clauses contain known information (i.e. information not derivable from context) and are cohesive in function, whereas non-rankshifted clauses contain unknown information and are therefore not cohesive in function.

It follows from this that there are two types of clauses: rankshifted and non-rankshifted clauses. According to Halliday, a rankshifted clause is a clause that is filling a slot characteristically occupied by a given unit to a lower rank. The process of rankshifting can occur from a higher rank to a lower one but not vise versa; it does not allow for upward shift. In other words, a rankshifted clause is a clause which is shifted
down the scale of rank to form part of another clause either of lower rank than itself or of equal rank to itself. According to Halliday, there are three types of rankshifted clauses:

(1) A clause which functions as a defining relative clause.
   e.g. The only plan which might have succeeded.
   defining relative clause

(2) A clause which functions as a subject.
   e.g. What I believe is the following.
   subject

(3) A clause which functions as a complement.
   e.g. It is what I told you.
   complement

The above clauses are considered to be rankshifted. However, a rankshifted clause cannot introduce a verbal process where the function of the clause is that of a sayer; these clauses are treated differently.

In order to clarify these three types of rankshifted clauses, we may consider the following example from Arabic:

(4) wa mimmā yu'akkidu ahammiyyata al-taqrīr annahu
   and what confirms-it importance the-report that-it is
   šadara fi asqābi al-ittihāmāt allatī waradat fi
   issued in ends the-accusations which came in
   taqriri al-lijān al-amrīkiyyah al-mudāficah c'an
   report the-committees the-American defendant about
   ḥuqūq al-insān
   rights the-human being

(Appendix B7)
(4) The important thing about this report is that it came after the accusations which have been issued by the American Councils for the protection of human rights.

As the above example shows, the clause allatî waradat fi taqrîrî al-lijâni al-amrîkiyyah is regarded as a defining relative clause. It is so because it specifies a particular subset of the general class of 'accusations'. Therefore, this defining clause is part of the main clause. Unlike a rankshifted clause, a non-rankshifted clause does not specify a particular subset of a general class, but it rather, as Halliday (1985a: 204) states, "adds a further characterization of something that is taken to be already fully specific. This "something" therefore is not necessarily just a noun; the domain of a non-defining relative clause may be a whole clause or any of its constituents". Here is an Arabic example elucidating this point:

(8) li dâlika qübila ittifâqu ʿṣâray for this reason met agreement two-halves
al-yaman bi al-tafâʿuli wa al-faraḥ min the-Yemen in the-optimism and the-joy from
aqṭâri al-ʿurûbatî wa min al-šuʿûbi al-ʿarabiyyah regions the-Arabic and from the nations the-Arab
allatî qâsat wa tuqâsî kama qâsâ al-yaman which suffered and suffer as suffered the-Yemen
min al-furqâti wa al-tanâḥur... from the-separation and the-conflict

(Appendix B15)
For this reason, the agreement between the two parts of Yemen has been welcomed with optimism and joy by Arab nations which have similarly suffered and suffer still the pain of separation, conflict and fratricide.

As shown above, the clause allatī qāsat wa tuqāsī kamā qāsā al-yaman min al-furqatī wa al-tanāhur is a non-defining relative clause, because it does not specify something specific out of a general class, but what it does in fact is adding a further characterization over something that has already been made specific. Therefore, this clause forms a separate clause from the main clause. The way these clauses split will indeed be shown later in the section 'rank and indentation'.

Before we demonstrate the hierarchical representation of these clauses (i.e. through a rank and indentation system), it is necessary to identify the means and the methods used for this analysis. This aspect is presented below.

4.4 Means and methods of analysis

As indicated earlier, I have started out with the hypothesis that:

1. Editorials as an argumentative text-form have their own generic structure. This structure exhibits the following aspects:

   a. Editorials display, in a dominant way, a particular type of clause relations.
b. Lexical repetition has a rhetorical effect and cohesive role in the continuity of editorials.

c. Parallelism has a persuasive function on the text-reader; it also affects text-structure.

d. Editorials’ theme-rheme structure has underlying rhetorical and pragmatic functions.

In addition, it has been suggested that editorials as a discourse genre have their own generic structure. This discourse genre has macro-linguistic characteristics (cohesion, restructuring, etc.) inherent within its structure. This structure leads to some kind of ambiguity and vagueness when translated literally into English.

To tackle this form of argumentation, some aspects of the approaches of Winter (1977) and Beekman & Callow (1988) will be used to identify the main constituents of editorials; these approaches will also be used to demonstrate the type of clause relations typical of this kind of discourse. For the analysis of cohesion (i.e. repetition, parallelism, cohesive chains, etc.), the approaches of Halliday & Hasan (1976) and Hasan (1983) will be used to show how editorial texts are textually coherent and what devices are important for their connectivity and meaning continuity. This, of course, entails the investigation of the linking devices, signalling expressions, connectives, and conjunctions by which the 'editorial text' is put together.
From Winter's approach, only the question-answer technique will be employed to identify the implicit relations embodied within this discourse, because, as Crombie (1985) argues, there are some problems with Winter's (1977) approach. First, there is some kind of confusion as far as the 'three vocabularies' set is concerned. These sets tend to overlap and in turn create some kind of ambiguity as to which 'vocabulary set' has actually been used. Second, the list of clause relations in Winter's approach is less comprehensive and conclusive than that of Beekman and Callow. Third, Winter's approach is based on the semantic analysis of the surface structure in which some very important formal and textual activities are missed out. Because of these shortcomings, our analysis will not use all of Winter's (1977) approach but just that of his 'question-answer' technique. Even within this technique, there are some limitations. As Jordan (1988) notes, however complete and accurate Winter's list of clause relations of textual meaning and continuity is, it can never identify all types of relations between clauses unless one elaborates on the question sufficiently. This is in fact one of the limitations of Winter's question-answer technique. Examples of this problem are given as follows:

(1) Question: limādā lam tadhab ilā al-madrasah?
(Why did not you go to school?)

Answer: li annanī kuntu mariđan
(Because I was sick.)
The examples clearly show that the question-answer technique does not always distinguish between all types of relations. The first relation signalled above is that of 'cause' whereas the other is that of 'purpose'. To avoid this problem, this study will not consider only the explicit utilization of the question-answer technique, but it will also pay great attention to the signalling expressions such as 'because', 'in order to', 'to', etc. These expressions in addition to the question-answer technique will enable us to see clearly the type of relation involved.

Because of the fact that the list of clause relations in Winter's approach is not conclusive and exhaustive, and because of the shortcomings stated above, this study will not adopt his list of clause relations, but that of Beekman & Callow. As noted earlier, this latter list is exhaustive and comprehensive, and therefore suits the purpose of this analysis.

As for the semantic relations and other cohesive devices between the constituents of the text, Halliday & Hasan (1976) and Hasan (1983) will be used to investigate these relations. This investigation will not be restricted to the application of a
semantic approach, but will include a pragmatic approach as well. The latter approach will be used to identify the intended meanings (Searle, 1969; Leech, 1981; and Grice 1975), and the communicative and social functions underlying such discourse.

After the analysis of these semantic relations and other cohesive devices inherent within the structure of editorials, we shall be in a position to discuss the macro-linguistic problems found among the constituents of this form of discourse. These macro-linguistic problems will be highlighted, and the significance of these problems for the translator and interpreter will be emphasized. An appropriate and effective approach to translating this form of argumentation will then be suggested. The approach will be presented and its efficiency and appropriateness will be tested by native speakers of English.

4.5 Rank and indentation system

Having distinguished between rankshifted and non-rankshifted clauses (see pp. 152-154), and having stated the methodological frameworks that will be used for this analysis, the next thing to do is to divide clauses into two types of clauses: 'developmental' clauses and 'support' clauses. These clauses will be presented through a rank and indentation system. Rank and indentation system is defined as the hierarchical organization of linguistic units and the manner in which these
units are indented). The way these clauses are presented will be shown later (see p. 236). According to Beekman & Callow (1988), developmental clauses are related to one another by 'addition' relations whereas support clauses are related to one another by one of the 'associative' or 'causal' relations such as 'grounds-conclusion', 'means-purpose', 'reason-result', etc. While this may sometimes be true, I do not think that developmental clauses are always related to one another by 'addition' relations. In this study therefore, developmental clauses do not have to be associated with 'addition' relations, instead, they can be supportive clauses in which one clause is related to another by one of the 'associative relations'. This in fact can be determined by the context in which a particular clause is used.

Although I am using for this analysis the rank and indentation system, it should be emphasized that developmental clauses are all of equal rank semantically (i.e. they are neither subordinate nor superordinate to one another); therefore, they will not be indented to the right or to the left. Support clauses, on the other hand, are not of equal rank; they are subordinate to the clause they support. Support clauses relating to whole clauses will be moved one unit to the right; those relating to part clauses are moved two indentation units to the right. Finally, clauses of a modal nature (e.g. wa ganiyyun can al-qawl, 'needless to say'), are moved one indentation unit to the left, since they are regarded as superordinate to the information they comment on.
It is worth mentioning that the 'rank and indentation system' is a facilitatory device, because it shows, in general terms, that any semantic unit, whether it is a clause, sentence or paragraph displays a structure which is different from all lower semantic units. The structure of the clause is different from the structure of the paragraph as far as relations, patterns of construction, etc. are concerned, even though they are similar in being semantic units. The text-producer, for instance, when arguing, starts giving background information about what he is trying to argue. Within this background information, there are main clauses and subordinate clauses. In this study, main clauses are typically 'developmental'. These clauses are used by the text-producer to develop the argument. Each developmental clause may be followed by supporting clauses, and these clauses normally serve to support or clarify another clause by explaining and highlighting it (Beekman & Callow, 1988). The rank and indentation system thus has a facilitatory power in showing which clauses are developmental and which are supportive. Consider the following text:

(1) akkada al-ra'īs ḥusnī mubārak
confirmed-he the-president Husni Mubarak
fi mu'tamari al-du'hāh
in conference the-du'ah

(2) anna al-ḥāṭara alladī yuhaddihu al-mujtama" that the-danger which threatens the-society
al-mišriy ṭūlātiyū ṭulātiyūn al-taṣṣāṣṣub:
the-Egyptian threefold the ramifications:

(3) al-taṭarrufu wa al-muṣāddirātū wa
the-fundamentalism and the-drugs and
al-infijārū al-sukkāniy,
the-explosion the-population,

(4) wa huwa amrun yumkinu maṣūṣ istifḥāluh
and is-it matter could with becoming-grave-its
an yūḏī bi mustaqbali al-bilādi
will lead in future the-country
bimā yufdi ilayhi min ṣawāqibī wakīmah
in what lead to-it from consequences terrible

(5) wa hiya ṣalā al-tartīb:
and are on the-arrangement, the-terrorism
wa al-ijrāmu wa al-ṣarāb
and the crime and the-destruction

(6) wa al-waqqiṣū anna
and the-fact that

(7) al-infijāra al-sukkāniy yumkinu
the-explosion the population could
an yakūna muḥajīra kullā al-maṣāṣkil
to be exploding all the-problems
ṣibra silsilatin min rudūdi al-afʻāl
through series from reactions the-deeds

(8) kullun minūḥa yaḥmilu nudūra al-κaṭāri
each from-them carries warning the-danger
fi ḫaddi dāt-ih.
in end self-it.

(9) fa huwa yuʻaddī maṣūṣ giyābi al-κiṭatī
because is-it lead to with absence the-plans
al-taḥassubiyya wa quṣūrī al-murāqabatī wa
the-expectation and short the-supervision and
iftiqārī al-idaratī ilā ilā al-fāṣiliyya ilā
lack the-administration to the-effectiveness to

162
The Egyptian President, Husni Mubarak, affirmed in the conference of Du‘ah that there are three dangers which threaten the Egyptian society: (3) namely Fundamentalism, drugs, and explosion of population. (4) These kinds of danger could, if they become grave, lead in the future to drastic results, (5) such as terrorism, crime, and ruination.

(6) In fact, (7) the explosion of population could, through a chain reaction, break up all these problems (8) with each one bearing its own harbinger of danger. (9) Because, with the absence of appropriate planning, deficiency of supervision, and lack of effective administration, (10) the explosion of...
population could become an impoverishing ineffective bureaucracy which makes society like a monster ravishing itself; it will also increase unemployment; (11) it inflames inflation (12) and it spreads corruption....

(16) The increase in population could of itself be a positive factor in determining the strength of the country, (17) since human resources are almost the most important reservoir for development...

Notice here that clause (1) is the starting point. Clause (2), which is indented one unit to the right, is a clause that is related to a whole clause (i.e. clause 1). Thus, this clause serves to support the preceding one by completing it. Clause (3) is indented two units to the right because it is related to a part clause (i.e. clause 2). Therefore, its relation to the previous clause is that of support. The same operation can also be applied to clauses (4) and (5).

As for clause (6), it is a modal clause. Therefore, it is indented one unit to the left. In fact one of shortcomings of Beekman & Callow's approach is that they do not introduce 'modal clauses'. A modal clause is treated here in accordance with Hodge & Kress's definition. According to them, a modal is:

"a term which describes the stance of participants in the semiosic process towards the state and the status of the system of classification of the mimetic plane. These include the categorizations of social persons, places, and sets of relations, which are from this point of view cultural places or values like any others."

Hodge & Kress (1988: 122)

---

1. Semiosic process is the social process by which meaning is constructed and exchanged.
2. Mimetic plane is the plane in which the message which exists outside itself is connected to a world to which it refers, and its meaning derives from this mimetic function it performs.
Clause (7) is a support clause and it is indented one unit to the right. Following this is clauses (8 & 9) which support a part clause (i.e. clause 7) and therefore they are indented two units to the right. Clause (10) is of equal rank semantically with clause (9); therefore it will not be indented in relation to that clause. These clauses are typically related to one another in a relation of 'addition'.

This process goes on up to clause (16) in which a developmental clause has been introduced. This clause is not indented to the right nor the left, as its main function is to develop the argument by taking it into a different kind of discussion.

In order to understand the organization of the clauses under discussion, and the way in which the whole text is split into smaller units (i.e. clauses) and larger units (i.e. paragraphs), we ought to demonstrate these clauses as follows:

| (1) | support 'whole clause' |
| (2) | support 'part clause' |
| (3) | support 'part clause' |
| (4) | support 'part clause' |
| (5) | support 'part clause' |
| (6) | modal |
| (7) | main clause |
| (8) | support 'part clause' |
| (9) | support 'part clause' |
| (10) | support 'part clause' |
| (11) | support 'part clause' |
| (12) | support 'part clause' |
|   |   |
| (16) | developmental |
| (17) | support 'whole clause' |
The above diagram shows that there are 14 clauses that are arranged lineally in such a way that the distance between one clause and another has a significance. The diagram also shows that these clauses are divided into 3 larger semantic units: the first unit is from (1) to (5); the second is from (6) to (12); and the third one is from (16) to (17). The division between one larger unit and another is shown above in the double spacing. Each one of these larger units is thematically or semantically related.

It should be pointed out here that, throughout this analysis, all our actual texts will be indented and analyzed according to the 'rank and indentation system' demonstrated above (see also Appendix A). However, before we present the analysis, we need to introduce the set of relations adopted; this set of relations is presented below.

4.6 **Set of clause relations**

Having divided the text into units, and established the methodological frameworks used for this analysis, we need afterwards to analyze or identify the type of relations involved between one clause and another.

On the basis of Beekman & Callow's approach, clauses can be classified into two sub-types: developmental clauses and support clauses. Developmental clauses are related to one another by 'addition' relations, whereas support clauses are related to each
other by association. Addition relations are categorized into
the following:

1. Chronological sequence; one event follows another.
2. Simultaneity: two events overlap with one another.
3. Alternation: this can be contrastive or supplementary. The
   contrastive always occurs in pairs with which are antonyms,
   i.e. ḥayyūn aw ṣavyvit 'alive or dead', or it can occur in
   pairs which are situational opposites such as bi al-bahr aw
   bi al-jaw 'by land or by sea'. Supplementary forms, on the
   other hand, can occur with a series of two or more choices in
   which these choices stay within the same domain. For
   example, if one says: mādā na'kulā aw mādā naṣrub 'what
   do we eat or drink', one is still talking within the same
   subject-matter (i.e. the domain of consuming sustenance).

4. Conversational exchange: when a particular kind of
   relation describes two halves of a conversation. One
   adds to what the other has said.

5. Matched support clauses: two or more clauses have the same
   relation to some other clauses which they support.

As for the associative or 'support' relations, they have the
four following sub-types:

1. **Support by clarification** (using a clause with distinct
   information. Three relations stem from this sub-types:
A. **Manner**

This relation will be determined by telling how it took place and in what way it happened. In terms of Winter’s question-answer technique, this relation answers the question: 'How did the event take place?' Consider the following example:

(18) \[\text{wa kāna min al-ṭabī'iy}\]
and was from the natural

(19) \[(\text{wa al-ḥālatu ḥādihi}),\]
(and the-case this),

(20) \[\text{an yu'akkida jalālatuhu ḏarūrata ʿawdati miğr}\]
to confirm-he Majesty-his necessity return Egypt
\[\text{al-ṣaqīqah ilā al-jāmiʿati al-ʿarabiyyah},\]
the-sister to the-League the-Arab,

(21) \[\text{wa an yadcu ilā taʿdilī miṭqiqi al-jāmiʿah},\]
and to call to amend charter the-League,

(22) \[\text{ca1 al-nahw allaqi yansajimu maca al-nawʾiyyati}\]
on the-way which conform with the-quality
\[\text{al-mumayyazah li al-ādāʾ al-ʿarabiyy.}\]
the-distinguished to performance the-Arab.

(Appendix B13)

(18) It was natural (19) in this particular instance (20) for His Majesty King Hussein to affirm the necessity of the return of Egypt to the Arab League (21) and call for the modification of the Arab league charter (22) in such a way that conforms with those characteristics needed for the Arab action.

Notice here that clauses (22) is related to the preceding clauses through a relation of 'manner'. This clause supports the preceding clauses by telling the way it will happen. All
"manner" relations will be determined according to the criterion stated above.

B. Comparison

This relation can be determined by whether there is some point of similarity between two things or not. Also, both sides of the comparison must be positive and there must be at least one point of difference. This relation will frequently be signalled through surface structure forms such as 'like' or 'as'. The following examples demonstrate this point:

(17) inna aḥadan lā yastaṭīcu an yunkira
     emph. one not could to deny

(18) anna miliyyatī amal al-muwāliyyata li sūriyyā
     that Militias Amal the-loyal to Syria
     tumattilu raʿsa ḥarbatin lahā
     represent head spear to-it

(19) mitlamā tumattilu miliyyatu ḥizbi allāh
     as/like represent Militias party God
     raʿsa ḥarbatin li ʿIrān
     head spear to Iran

(Appendix B6)

(17) No one can deny (18) that the Amal Militias, which are loyal to Syria, represent a spearhead for it (19) just as the Hizbullah Militias which are loyal to Iran represent a spearhead for Iran.

As shown above, clause (19) is connected with clause (18) by a comparison relation. This relation is expressed through the
connective *mitlamā* 'like'. There are two things that have been compared with each other: *milīsāvat amal* and *milīsāvat hijbu allāh*. The 'likeness' between these two things is *ra'su harbah*. This relation can be determined according to the criteria given above.

C. Contrast

When two propositions have at least two points of difference, there is a relation of 'contrast' between them. This relation occurs also if one of the points of difference is a positive-negative opposition. Here is an example:

(6) inna mas'ūliyyata majlisi al-amni al-dawliy
     inna responsibility council the-security the-Int'l
     allā yaqifa cinda jarīmati isqāṭi al-ṭā'irah,...
     is-not stop at crime shooting-down the-aeroplane,

(8) bal an yanzura ilayhā wa yatanāwalahā bi
     but is look to-it and deal-it in
     al-baḥṭi min ḥayṭu kawnuhā juz'an min
     the discussion from as being part from
     hādihi al-ḥarbi al-mustamīrah bayna al-ṣīrāq wa īrān.
     this the-war the-continuous between the-Iraq and Iran.

(Appendix B9)

(6) The responsibility of the international Security Council should not to stop at the shooting down of the (Iranian) aeroplane (7) (...) (8) rather it should see it and deal with it as part and parcel of the continuing war between Iraq and Iran.
It is clear that clause (8) states something which is opposite to what has been stated in clause (6). This clause (i.e. clause 8) stands in the support relation of contrast to clause (6), i.e. being signalled by bal 'but'. This relation therefore will be determined according to whether there is a positive-negative opposition or there are at least two points of difference.

2. Support by clarification (using a clause with similar information). There are three kinds of relation:

A. Equivalence

This relation is mainly concerned with the fact that two clauses give the same meaning. The relation in question occurs in two forms:

1. Synonymous expressions: if words or expressions express the same content such as:

\[
\text{tamatta} \quad \text{wa kun sa}^{\circ} \text{idan} \\
\text{enjoy} \quad \text{and be happy}
\]

(Enjoy it and be happy)

2. Negated antonyms: if the content of the supporting clause occurs in the form of antonym that has been negated. The following example is a case in point:
It should be pointed out that the relation of equivalence would seem to involve, for the pragmatic purpose of emphasis, semantic repetition. However, this relation may be confused with the 'contrast relation', particularly if one considers the following examples to be also expressing an equivalence relation:

(1) anā lam ātī li udammir wa I did not come to destroy and lākinna-niy ji'tu li abni but-I came to build

(I did not come to destroy but (I came) to build.)

(2) idā kunta tagsuquni̲, fa lā takdib if were tell-truth-me then not lie

(If you always tell the truth, don't lie.)

As seen above, the 'equivalence relation' may be confused with the 'contrast' relation and that of the 'condition-consequence' relation (c.f. p.180). To avoid such a confusion, this relation will be substituted with the 'paraphrase' relation, a modification which seems necessary to Beekman & Callow's list of clause relations. It follows from this therefore that the 'paraphrase' relation will be determined according to whether the two clauses give a similar meaning or not.
B. **Generic-specific**

This relation will be understood if one clause is stated generically and the other is stated specifically. Consider the following example:

\[\text{jā'a-niy ilā al-bayti yamṣī c'alā rijlay-hi}\]

(He came to the house walking.)

In this example, 
\text{jā'a-niy 'came'} is stated generically and \text{yamṣī 'walking'} is stated specifically. Therefore, this relation will be determined if one clause is stated generally and another is stated specifically.

C. **Amplification-contraction/summary**

This amplification-contraction relation involves the provision of more information in one clause than in the other. That is to say, one of the clauses expresses the semantic content with less detail. For example:

\[(26) \text{wa c'indamā tata'azzamu al-awdāc li}\]

\[\text{and when be in crisis the-circumstances to}\]

\[\text{asbābin ūattā, reasons whatever,}\]

\[(27) \text{fa lābudda an tūda'a al-awlawyyāt, then must to put the-priorities,}\]
When crisis looms for whatever reason, (27) priorities must be made: (28) problems and how to deal with them must be put in correct perspective, (29) because it would be futile to waste time and effort in development projects only to see population growth swamp the achievements leaving us worse off than before. (30) When that happens, any serious action becomes like ploughing in the sea.

Notice here that there are five clauses. The relation of clause (28) to clause (27) is that of 'amplification'. That is, clause (28) gives more information, particularly the information that has been already mentioned in clause (27). There is a 'grounds' relation in clause (29), followed by a 'contraction' relation expressed in clause (30) through the contracted form cinda' idin.
3. Support by argument

These clauses, which argue for one another, are classified into the following categories:

A. Reason-result

Here, the 'reason' states why the particular result came about. It also expresses whether this 'reason' arose by the action of an agent or by something else. In terms of Winter's question-answer technique, this relation answers the question 'why'. Consider the examples below:

(13) wa lākinna-hā āfātun
     and but they evils
(14) yatawalladu maṣa-hā al-taṣāruf
     originate with-them the-extremism
     (Appendix B1)

(13) But all these are evils (14) that lead to fundamentalism.

In the above examples, the 'reason-result' relation has been expressed. Clause (13) states the reason āfāt 'evils', followed by the 'result' which is stated in clause (14) as yatawalladu maṣahā al-taṣāruf 'lead to fundamentalism'.

It is worth adding that this relation can be signalled by explicit connectives such as 'because', 'since', etc; it can also be signalled by implicit connectives. A result relation may be
brought about by different reasons, or a reason may be related to several results.

B. Means-result

In this relation, the 'means' states how a particular kind of result is accomplished. That is, it answers the question 'how'. For example:

\[
\text{laqad anqada \, caliyyun al-walada bi}
\]
\[
\text{laqad save \, All \, the-boy \, by}
\]
\[
\text{sibāḥati-hi \, al-māhirah}
\]
\[
\text{swimming-his \, the-skillful}
\]

(Ali saved the boy by his skillful swimming.)

As shown above, \text{bi \, sibāḥatih}i \, \text{al-māhirah} 'by his skillful swimming' is regarded as a 'means', and the 'result' is \text{ingād al-walad} '(he) saved the boy'. However, this relation should not be confused with 'instrument relation', as 'instrument relation' usually deals with an inanimate object which is used to do something. Consider the example below:

\[
\text{fataḥa \, caliyyun al-būba \, bi \, al-muṭtāh}
\]
\[
\text{opened-he \, Ali \, the-door \, with \, the-key}
\]

(Ali opened the door with a key.)

Notice here that there is an inanimate object, and that is the \text{muṭtāh} 'key'. This relation does not answer the question 'how' but rather 'by what instrument'. Hence, 'means-result'
relation will be identified according to the criterion stated above.

C. Means-purpose

This relation can be easily confused with the preceding one. Both of these relations have 'means' and both state the action which has been taken to accomplish the result. However, in the 'means-result relation', the result is accomplished whereas in the 'means-purpose relation', the result is coveted. This 'coveted result' is stated whether it has been accomplished or not. Therefore, the emphasis is on the intention rather than the accomplishment. Consider the following examples:

(20) wa huwa al-asāsu fi dafci sā'iri al-cawāmili
and it the-basis in pushing all the-factors

(21) li takūna marākiza ḥaqiqiyyah li al-quwati
to be centers real to the-power
miṭla masāḥati al-arḍi wa mukawinātiha min
like area the-land and components-its from
al-ṭarwati al-maḥānīyyati wa al-zirāʿiyyati,
the wealth the-mineral and the-agricultural,
wa al-numuww al-ṣināʿiyy wa al-tijāriyy
and the-growth the-industrial and the-commercial
bi šiqqayh al-istihlākiyy wa al-ṭaṣdīriyy,
in halves the-consumptive and the-exportive,
wa al-qudurāti al-caskariyyati wa
and the-capabilities the-military and
al-tiknulojiyyah,
the-technological,

(Appendix B1)
This is the basis on which to build (21) to utilize the country's vast resources in terms of land-area and with its wealth of mineral and farmland, and to develop the industrial and commercial growth in the consumer and export sectors, together with military and technological capabilities.

It can be seen that the connection between the above two clauses is that of 'means-purpose'. This relation is signalled through the linking particle li 'in order to'. However, the 'means-purpose relation' can also be signalled by other connecting particles such as min aili 'for the purpose', likay 'in order to', etc.

It should be emphasized that explicit connection can often be misleading, and in this study, therefore, one cannot rely simply on the connector nor on the surface structure, but must also consider the underlying structure as well.

It follows from all this that 'means-purpose relation' will be determined according to whether the result is desired or not. The purpose expressed in this type of relation does not have to take place, as the emphasis in this relation is on the intention of the speaker rather than on its achievement.

D. Condition-Consequence

The criterion for this sort of relation will be determined if the 'consequence' is dependent upon a realizable or non-realizable 'condition' or a hypothetical contingency. In this relation, the speaker indicates the event referred to in the
conditional clause; that conditional clause has never actually taken place, and it is not important whether the facts are true or false. The process of determining whether these facts are true or false or this conditional proposition has taken place or not, will be determined by the context. The consequence clause states what the text-producer supposes will happen. The following example demonstrates this point:

(1) *Ida qarrarat al-wilayatu al-muttahidatu wa if decide the-States the-United and al-ittihedu al-sofyati wa faransa wa the-Union the-Soviet and France and biritanywa al-gin an yasdur qararan Britain and the-China to issue decision yafriqu al-euqubat calal al-nigam al-Iraniy, impose the-penalties on the-regime the-Iranian, yafridu al-cuqibat cal al-nizam al-iraniy, impose the-penalties on the-regime the-Iranian, (2) fa inna hada al-qarar yuqbalu then inna this the-resolution be accepted min qibali muqdam al-duwal al-ukra from by most the-countries the-others (Based on clauses 23-27) (Appendix B9)

(1) If the United States, or the Soviet Union or France, Britain, and China decided to issue a resolution that imposes sanctions on the Iranian regime (2) then, this resolution will be accepted by almost all other countries.

As shown above, clause (2) supports clause (1) by providing the 'consequence' of the 'condition' which has been stated in clause (1). Therefore, clause (1) is related to clause (2) in a
relation of 'condition-consequence'. This relation is often but not always realized by the particles *ida* 'if' and *fa* 'then'.

E. Concession-Contra-expectation

This relation involves an unexpected result. That is, the effect occurs in a form in which the result is unexpected. In this relation, the concession clause conveys the impression that this is not the result that has been expected, but it is rather an unexpected one. It is this component of expected versus unexpected that characterizes this kind of relation. Here is an exemplification of this case:

(11) *wa idā kunnā ma idānati*
and if were with condemnation

al-jarīmati al-amārīkiyyah
the-crime the-American

(12) *bi istibārihā amalan mufjičan*
in being action horrific

(13) *wa ma al-tandīdi bi tawjihi*
and with the-condemnation of directing

al-sawārīk al-amārīkiyyah ilā tā'iratin
the-missiles the-American to aeroplane

madaniyyah,
civilian,

(14) *fa innanā ma darūrati an takūna*
then we with necessity to be

al-munāsabatu furṣatan amāma majlisi
the-opportunity chance before Council

al-amn li mutābačati qarārihi raqam
the-Security to follow up resolution-its number

180
(11) And if one agrees with the condemnation of the American crime (of the shooting down of the civilian Iranian areoplane) (12) as being a horrific act (13) and with the condemnation of directing the American missiles towards a civilian areoplane, (14) then one would agree that this has to be an occasion for the Security Council to follow up its resolution number 598 regarding the Iran-Iraq war...

Notice here that clauses (11) and (13) provide the concession relation, and these two clauses are followed by a contra-expectation relation. We may realize that the first two clauses begin with wa (hatta) ida kunnä 'even if we were...' followed by clause (14) which expresses the unexpected result. Clauses (11) and (13) do not express 'conditional' relations as these clauses have, in relation to clause (14), a point of difference: 'past time' versus 'now'. There are of course explicit markers that signal this type of relation; some of these markers are bi al-ragimi min 'although, in spite of', hatta 'even', etc. Here is another example, which is my own, demonstrating this point:

(1) hatta wa in kunnä namliku al-katīra
    even and if were-we have the-lots
    min al-nuqūd
    from the-money
The above example demonstrates that there is an unexpected result, stemming from clause (1). That is, it might be reasonably supposed that possession of a large amount of money would enable one to buy a house. However, as clause (2) demonstrates, this is not the case. This is therefore a case of contra-expectation.

It follows from this, that the 'concession-contra expectation relation' will be determined when the truth of the element, which is counter to our expectations, is directly denied or not.

F. Grounds-Conclusion

This relation is based on whether there is a deduction drawn on the basis of some kind of observation or not. If there is a deduction drawn from an observation, then there is a 'grounds-conclusion' relation. More specifically, our main concern in this kind of relation is that one clause states an observation and a conclusion is drawn from it. Consider the example below:

That man knows everything about cars; so/therefore/I conclude that he is a mechanic.
It can be noted here that the observation represents the grounds’ whereas the inference/deduction represents the 'conclusion. As the above example shows, a prior connection has been established between 'knowing everything about cars' and that of a 'mechanic'. These assumptions tend to be culturally oriented. Let us take an example from our actual texts to elucidate this point:

\[
\begin{align*}
(31) \text{ wa } \text{idā kāna al-infijāru al-sukkāniy } & \text{ and if were-it the-explosion the-population } \\
& \text{ al hādā al-naḥw huwa al-tahaddī } \\
& \text{ on this the-form is the-challenge } \\
& \text{ al-akbaru li ṣuqūdūn qādimah, } \\
& \text{ the-largest to generations coming, } \\
(32) \text{ fa inna al-cajza } \text{ can muṣālajatihi } & \text{ then the the-failure about tackeling-it } \\
& \text{ yu’addī bi al-ḍarūrati ilā cajzin } \\
& \text{ leads in the-necessity to failure } \\
& \text{ fi muwājahati sā’iri al-tahaddiyāt } \\
& \text{ in confronting all the-challenges }
\end{align*}
\]

(Appendix B1)

(31) If the explosion of population will be the greatest challenge facing future generations, (32) then, the inability to tackle it will lead to failure in coping with any other challenges.

Notice here that clause (31) signals the 'grounds relation', whereas clause (32) is connected with the preceding clause through a 'conclusion' relation. This conclusion is drawn or deduced from an observation given in clause (31). Therefore, as
was demonstrated above, the 'grounds-conclusion relation' will be
determined according to whether a conclusion is deduced from an
observation/fact or not.

4. **Support by orientation**

These types of relations will be used in this study to
provide background information for other clauses. As Beekman &
Callow note, **support by orientation clauses** provide orientation
in terms of time, space, and some other accompanying event.

Three types of relations emerge from this category:

**A. Time**

This relation concerns the time when a particular event
takes place. In terms of Winter's question-answer technique,
this relation answers the question 'when'. Consider the example
below:

(26) wa ʿindamā tataʿazzamū al-awḍāʾ
and when be in crisis the-situations
li asbābin šattā
to reasons whatever

(27) fa lābudda ann tūda ʾal-awlawiyyāt
then must to put the-priorities

(Appendix B1)

(26) When crisis looms for whatever reason, (27) priorities
must be made.
In terms of Winter’s question-answer technique, clause (26) answers the question 'when' which, among other things, supports it by giving its temporal occurrence. For example, if one asks the question: when must priorities be made?, then the answer would be: when crisis looms for whatever reason. The connection therefore between these two clauses is that of 'time'.

It is worth noting at this stage that this relation may precede or follow the supported one in time, or it may be simultaneous with it. However, all these types of relations simply orientate one another. This time relation will be used in this analysis according to whether it expresses time at which a proposition takes place or not, and it should answer the question 'when' without confusing the conditional 'when' with the temporal 'when'.

B. Location

Like the preceding relation, this relation provides background information. However, the difference between them is that the previous one provides time whereas this one provides the place. In terms of Winter’s question-answer technique, this relation answers the question 'where'. Here is an example demonstrating this point.

(1) akkada al-ra'īs husnī mubārak fi mu'tamari al-dufāh
   affirmed-he the-president Husni Mubarak in conference the-Du'ah
(1) President Husni Mubarak affirmed in the Du'ah Conference (2) that there are three dangers which threaten the Egyptian society:

(2) anna al-kaṭara allaqlī yuhaddidu that the-danger which threatens al-mujtama' al-misriy ṣulūṭiy al-taṣā'īqub:
the-society the-Egyptian threefold the-ramifications:

(Appendix B1)

Using Winter’s question-answer technique, we may present a spatial relation by the following question:

Question: ayna akkada al-raʾīs ḥusnī mubārak where affirmed the-president Husni Mubarak anna al-kaṭara allaqlī yuhaddidu al-mujtama' that the-danger which threatens al-misriy ṣulūṭiy al-taṣā'īqub?
the-society the-Egyptian threefold the-ramifications

Where did the President Husni Mubarak affirm that there are three dangers which threaten the Egyptian society?

Answer: fi muʿtamar al-duʾāh
in conference the-Duʾāh
In the Duʾāh conference.

It follows from all the above that this relation will be determined according to whether the location, where the event has taken place, is identified or not. It should also answer the question 'where'.
C. Circumstance

This relation centers around an event. It answers the question 'what else?' However, this relation is not properly distinguishable from the 'content' relation at one periphery or from the 'manner' relation at the other. Even if were to recognize the distinction between these relations, there is no practical disadvantages in eliminating this relation.

There are however other types of support relations which are related, not to the main clause, but to the part clause. These are as follows:

1. Identification

This relation serves to identify one thing or event in contrast with another. It singles it out semantically. From a semantic point of view, it is equivalent to the defining relative clause; and it almost always occurs in this form. It can occur separately or in the general flow of discourse. Here is an example that shows what I am talking about:

(2) anna al-kaṭara alladī yuhaddidu
that the-danger which threatens
al-mujtamaʾ al-miʿriy ʿulāṭiy
the-society the-Egyptian threefold
al-taṣāʿṣub:
the ramifications:

(Appendix B1)
(2) The danger, which threatens the Egyptian society, is of threefold ramifications:

In this example, \textit{alladī yuḥaddidu al-muṭama} is a defining relative clause; this clause singles out the \textit{katar} 'danger' from all other sorts of \textit{aktār} 'dangers'. However, in all our actual texts, these clauses will not be listed separately from their preceding clause, as they are closely related to their preceding ones, and are therefore regarded as forming part of the main clause.

2. Comment

This relation is regarded as the least well-defined kind of relation in Beekman & Callow's list of clause relations. This is so because most clauses, in one way or another can be 'comments'. According to Beekman & Callow, a 'comment relation' is simply concerned with giving information about something. It is the semantic equivalent of a non-restrictive relative clause. This relation is used to describe a person or a thing that has already been identified. Consider the following example:

\begin{align*}
\text{rabbī alladī} & \text{ kalaqanī wa zawwadanī} \text{ cilmā} \\
\text{God-my who created-me and provide-me knowledge}
\end{align*}

(God who created me and provides me with knowledge.)

In the above example, it can be realized that there are two comments on God: \textit{alladī kalaqanī} 'who created me', and \textit{alladī}...
zawwadānī cilmā 'who provided me with knowledge'. To avoid the problem of over-inclusion, the comment relation will be classified into two types: evaluative comment, which is an expression of opinion, and non-evaluative comment, which simply provides information on something. Here is an example from our texts:

(8) li ḍālika qūbila ittifāqu ʿṣṭray al-yaman therefore met agreement half-two the-Yemen
bi al-tafaʿuli wa al-faraḥ min aqṭārī in the-optimism and the-joy from regions
al-ʿurūbatī wa min al-ṣūrūbi al-ʿarabīyyah the-Arab and from the-nations the-Arab

(9) allāti qāsat wa tūqāṣī kāmā qūsā which suffered and still suffering as suffered
al-yaman min al-furqati wa al-tanāḥur the-Yemen from the-separation and the-conflict
wa al-iqṭīṭāl al-ʿadamī bayna al-aṣīqāʾ and the-killing the-fatal between the-brothers

(Appendix B15)

(8) For this reason, the agreement between the two-parts of Yemen has been welcomed with optimism and joy by all Arab nations (9) which have similarly suffered and suffer still the pain of separation, conflict and fratricide.

Notice here the function of clause (9); it is that of a 'comment'. It is, of course, a non-defining relative clause in which less evaluation has been provided. If we compare this clause with an example which has the expressions 'beautiful', 'skillful', etc., one can see that these expressions tend to be more evaluative than qāsat wa tūqāṣī. It follows from this then
that the above clause is a non-evaluative comment; rather it adds some information on the preceding clause. The way this relation is identified will depend on whether the clause gives more information on the preceding clause or not.

3. Content

This relation tends to complete the preceding clause by answering the question 'what'. In English, it is always followed by 'that'. In Arabic however, 'content' relation often occurs after modal clauses, the particle anna 'that', etc. Although this relation often occurs in this form, it does not necessarily exclude other forms. Here is an elaboration on this kind of relation:

(6) wa al-wāqi‘u anna
and the-reality that

(7) al-infijāra al-sukkāniy yumkinu
the-explosion the-population could

an yakūna mufajjira kulla al-mašākil
to be exploding all the-problems

ṣibra silsilatin min rudūdi al-af’āl
through series from reactions the-actions

(8) kullun minhā yahmilu nudura al-kaṭari fi
each from-them carries warning the-danger in

ḥaddi dātih.
end self-it.

(Appendix B1)

(6) In fact, (7) the explosion of population could, through a chain reaction, instigate all these problems (8) with each one bearing its own harbinger of danger.
As the example shows, clause (7) provides the 'content' of clause (6) which is a modal. Modal clauses express the viewpoint of the speaker, and as suggested earlier, these clauses are often followed by 'content clauses'. The relation of 'content' expressed in clause (7) is signalled through the particle *anna* 'that'. This particle almost always expresses a 'content relation'.

4.7 Analysis of textual cohesion

In the previous section, we have demonstrated the set of clause relations adopted for this study. This section identifies the our approach to cohesion. Cohesion involves possibilities that make the text hang together; it is expressed partly through the grammar and partly through vocabulary. Therefore, when we talk about cohesion, we are in fact referring to grammatical and lexical cohesion.

In order to analyze the ties that exist within our editorial text-forms, this study will follow Halliday & Hasan (1976) and Hasan (1983, 1984a). However, it should be pointed out that the focus of this study will not be on grammatical cohesion, but rather on lexical cohesion. The way this category is treated is presented below:

4.7.1 Lexical cohesion

It was suggested earlier (see Chapter 3) that lexical cohesion involves the selection of lexical items. According to
Hasan (1983), lexical cohesion can be categorized into two categories: general category such as repetition, synonymy, antonymy, hyponomy, and meronymy, and instantial category such as equivalence, naming, and semblance. These categories are investigated in Section (3.3.5).

Within these categories, an attempt will be made to demonstrate how Repetition of Lexical Items, Identity and Similarity chains and types of processes are treated in this study. These aspects will be presented below:

4.7.1.1 Repetition of lexical items

Repetition of lexical items will be treated in this study as the reoccurrence of the same or a semantically related lexical item. The following text, which is taken from our actual editorials, demonstrates this point:

(1) ta'tī munāqašatu majlisi al-amni al-dawliy come discussion Council the-security the-international
li isqāṭi al-ṭā'irati al-Īrāniyyah furṣatan ukrā to shooting-down the-areoplane the-Iranian chance another
likay yaqīfa al-majlisu maṣṣa mas'ūliyyāti-hi wa to stand the-Council with responsibilities-its and
wa iltizāmāti-hi wa al-ahdāfi al-ḥaqiqiyyāti allatĪ and commitments-its and the-goals the-real which
kānat warā'a inšā'ī hay'atī al-umāni were behind establishment organization the-nations
al-muttaḥidati kulli-hā. the-united all-it.

(Appendix B9)
(1) The international Security Council's discussion of the shooting down of the Iranian aeroplane is another chance for the Council to stand by the principles, duties and responsibilities upon which the whole organization of the United Nations is based.

It is very evident from the above text that items that are repeated connect parts of the text together, and the occurrence of one item cannot be interpreted without reference to the other. For example, majlisu al-amni al-dawliy has been lexically repeated four times. This provides meaning continuity to the whole text. The repetition of lexical items is shown as follows:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{majlisu al-amni al-dawliy} \\
\text{al-majlis} \\
\text{mas'uliyyat-hi} \\
\text{iltizamati-hi}
\end{align*}
\]

Based on the previous discussion, the repetition of lexical items will be treated as the reoccurrence of the same word or words that are semantically related.

4.7.1.2 Identity and similarity chains

As was suggested earlier (see Ch.3), chains are means for achieving textual coherence; these chains are created in two forms: first, chains in which the relation between the members of
the text is identified through the identity of situational meaning, (i.e Identity Chain (IC)). This category is typically realized by co-reference. For example, Adam, huwa and the suffixed-hu create an identity chain as these items are co-referential with one another and therefore refer to the same identity, (i.e Adam).

The second type of chain is that in which the relation is created through the identification of similarity of situational meaning, (i.e Similarity Chain (SC)). This kind of chain can be realized through synonymy, antonymy, hyponymy (including co-hyponomy), and meronymy (including co-meronymy). Any item that stands in any of these relations to the other creates a similarity chain. Here is an example demonstrating this point:

(26) ammā al-muṣāraḥatu wa al-mukāṣafatu fa hiya but the-honesty and the-uncovering then is tuʿaddīnu kamā ẓaharat fi qimmati al-jāmiʿah promise as appeared in summit the-League bi ʾahdīn jadīdin fi hādā al-ʾamal in era new in this the-action

(27) akṭara ʾtiqatan wa miṣdāqīyyah wa more confidence and authenticity and ʿabāṭa ʾalā al-iḥtiḥāmi wa al-jiddiyyah, worthy on the-respect and the-seriousness, wa akṭara taʿbīran ʾan ḥarakati and more expressive about movement al-ṣawāriʿi al-ʾarabiyyah, the-streets the-Arab,

(Appendix B4)
(26) However, through the openness and honesty which has been shown in the Arab League Summit, (27) a new era of confidence and honesty, more in keeping with current developments in the Arab world, has emerged.

In this example, there is a similarity chain which connects members of the text together. This chain is realized through repetition in a synonymous relation. For example, al-musāraḥatu and al-mukāṣafatu are connected by reiteration. This same connection occurs between ṭiqah and misdāqiyyatu. However, there is a causal relation between misdāqiyyatu and ṭiqah, and the same relation occurs between al-mukāṣafatu and misdāqiyyatu. At the same time, there is a synonymous relation between al-musāraḥatu and al-mukāṣafatu. Diagrammatically, this similarity chain is represented as follows:

Based on the above discussion, the IC and SC will be treated according to whether or not there is an identity or similarity of situational meaning.
4.7.1.3 Types of process

Types of process will be analyzed according to Halliday (1985a). A process is a representation of meaning; it is meaning in the sense of content. It refers to anything that is expressed in by a verb, event (whether it is a physical event or not), a state or relation. A process consists of three components: the process itself, the participant in the process and the circumstances associated with the process.

According to Halliday, there are three basic types of processes. First, there is material process, i.e. a process of doing such as the verbs shoot, throw, etc. Second, there is a mental process, (i.e. a process of sensing such as the verbs like, see, please, etc). Third, there is a relational process, (i.e. a process of being such as the verbs is, was, etc).

Accordingly, a process can be mental (see, please, believe, say); action (throw, shoot); and it can be relational (is, was). These types of processes will be investigated later. However, for the time being, the way a process is treated is shown in the following example:

(1) bi al-amsi zāra şāhibu al-sumw amīru
in yesterday visited-he owner the-highness Emir
al-bilādi qāidatay al-sālim wa ahmād
the-country two-bases Ali the-Salim and Ahmad
al-jābir al-jawwiyyatayn
the-Jabir the-air
His highness, Prince Jabir Al-Ahmad, paid a visit yesterday to the two-air bases of Ali Al-Salim and Jabir Al-Ahmad (2) where he met his senior officers in the armed forces.

Even if it was natural that Prince Jabir makes such a visit to inspect this important sector of the country, ...

The above example shows that there is a material process embodied within the text through the lexical items zāra 'he visited', qābala 'he met', and yaqūmu 'he makes (a visit). There are other types of processes embodied throughout the whole text (see the whole text under discussion in Appendix D21), and all these represent the text-producer's realization of the content. However, the process that is manifested in the above text represents actions performed by the Emir. The way this process is represented is shown below:
4.8 The study of parallelism

For investigating the role parallelism plays in Arabic editorials, Koch's (1982) approach will be used to demonstrate this phenomenon. There are two kinds of parallelism involved: complete parallelism where there is a complete manifestation of the same linguistic forms, and listing parallelism where there is a mixture of lexical cohesion and syntactic cohesion (Koch, 1982: 170). This approach will be used to show how parallel constructions are manipulated for the purpose of persuasion, and how these two types of parallelism highlight and serve textual and rhetorical functions of the text. To this effect, the duplication of similar parallel constructions makes the effect more intensive. Here is an example demonstrating this point:
History will record in honor and glory all the Arab leaders who participated in establishing this wanted entity. (29) History will also record the fact that it was His Majesty King Hussein Bin Talal who called for and coordinated the biggest Arab achievement in modern time.

The above example shows that clause (28) is parallel to clause (29). This is realized through the parallel constructions wa sa yaḏkuru al-tārīḵ 'history will remember'. This clause (i.e. clause 29) has been reused for rhetorical purposes such as emphasis, assertion, etc. All our parallel constructions will be analyzed according to whether there is a complete manifestation of linguistic forms or a mixture of lexical or syntactic cohesion.

4.9 Summary

The previous chapter attempted to give an account of the means and methods that will be employed for the analysis of the
selected text-forms. It also attempted to present the set of clause relations adopted for this study and demonstrate why other lists of clause relations (e.g. Winter 1977) do not suit the purpose of this thesis. This chapter identified weaknesses of Beekman & Callow's (1988) set of clause relations and modified these shortcomings so as to suit the analysis of our actual texts. In addition, an attempt was made to identify our approach to cohesion (i.e. lexical cohesion, identity and similarity chains, types of processes, parallelism, etc.) in order to describe how editorial text-forms achieve textual coherence and how they establish the overall cohesion within their main constituents.
CHAPTER 5
THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE CONSTITUENTS OF
EDITORIALS AT BOTH HIGH AND LOW LEVELS

5.0 Introduction

In the last chapter, we demonstrated the approaches and set of clause relations that will be applied to our argumentative text-forms. We also identified weaknesses of Beekman & Callow’s (1988) set of relations and modified these shortcomings so as to suit the analysis of our actual text-forms. This was carried out through the methodological frameworks indicated in the preceding chapter. This chapter investigates the relations between the constituents of editorials at both high and low levels. High level means entities larger than a single clause, (i.e a complex of clauses, paragraph, etc). Low level means entities up to and including a single clause. These two levels make up the whole text. All this will be manifested through a detailed description of the main constituents of editorial text-forms. The chapter also uses these same methodological frameworks to analyze argumentative editorials and show their generic and semantic structure. What is meant here by 'semantic structure' is the type of connection, clause relations, cohesive devices, types of processes, patterns of construction, building blocks, etc. that constitute editorial text-forms. The purpose of this description is to provide the reader with an overall picture of this form of argumentation, (i.e editorials). This is a necessary step before
identifying the main constituents of these text-forms, and demonstrating how the constituents of these text-forms shed some light on the way in which these texts should be translated.

In order to identify the main constituents of editorials as well as the typical types of clause relations, an attempt will be made to analyze a single text-form step by step, while referring from time to time to others. We believe that by analyzing a single text-form, one can reflect the general through a particular. As Becker (1981) argues, a single text or even a single sentence can mirror a whole culture. This is true, because in order to understand a text, one has to understand the culture surrounding it. But at the same time, one should also be in a position to show how that particular text reflects the whole language. For the time being, let us analyze an editorial text-form step by step in order to see how each clause is interwoven with what precedes as well as with what follows; this will enable us, in turn, to identify the type of relations as well as the main constituents typical of this form of argumentation.

5.1 Relations between constituents of editorials

In any process of writing, a speaker or text-producer is not only interested in stating his perception of the world, but deducing what is going on as well, (i.e is the text-producer describing something or attempting to persuade the reader, etc?) For example, the following text is about King Hussein's speech which points out, as the text producer sees it, that Jordan, under all circumstances, supports the people of Palestine. This
is evident in its title al-urdun...al-ṣahd 'Jordan...keeps its promise'. Therefore, this text-form can be characterized as a 'pro-argument'. A pro-argument means here that the text-producer is interested to show the positive aspect of this speech; therefore, he is defending the main thesis of the text.

In this text-form, as in other ones as well, a text-producer in argumentation deduces something out of what he sees and perceives; he makes his own assumptions about certain things; he evaluates these things systematically in terms of whether they are good or bad; whether they are successful or not (Hoey 1979). As a result, the text-producer may feel that some lexical expressions need to be reiterated; others need to be made explicit; he may want to mould them into a coherent vision and use them for particular ends. All these can be utilized by the text-producer for pragmatic or rhetorical purposes, i.e. emphasis, assertion, etc. for this reason, analyzing editorials in terms of their main constituents may shed some light on the way these text-forms should be interpreted and translated. This process will be carried out later in Chapter (7).

Moreover, a speaker/writer may make his organization of the text explicit; he may use certain words to explain and clarify the train of thought; other words, on the other hand, are put to develop this train of thought. It is these words that should be taken as the central keys in the process of translation. Such words tend to represent the text-producer's specification of his content of the text and the exchange of his thought with others; To this effect, the text-producer may specify the function of this content by using relations and cohesive devices.
In order to see how these elements are organized in our actual editorial text-forms, we need to analyze them in terms of relations between the constituents of editorials at a low level (i.e. relations and cohesive devices between one clause and another) and relations between the constituents of editorials at a high level (i.e. relations and cohesive devices between one paragraph and another). This will enable us to identify the type of relations typical of this argumentative discourse, and the main constituents of such a text-form. As Thompson & Mann (1987, 1988) argue, describing the relationships holding between parts of a text is unequivocally important for showing the kinds of constituents a text can have, and how these parts are connected to make the text function as a coherent and unified unit. This, according to Thompson & Mann, is called the Rhetorical structure Theory (RST). According to Thompson & Mann, RST is a theory about text-organization; it is a theory which characterizes text-structure in terms of relations that hold parts of the text together. All this, for translation purposes, tends to reflect the semantic structure of the text-form under discussion.

It is worthwhile noting at this stage that according to rank and indentation system and Halliday's (1985a) criterion of rankshifted and non-rankshifted clauses, which was presented in Chapter (4) above, the editorial text-form, that is being subjected to the analysis, has 36 smaller semantic units (36 clauses) and 8 larger semantic units (8 units larger than the clause) (see Appendix A8). In order to understand the system of relations among these clauses and the connections holding between them and between paragraphs, we need first to analyze the
semantic structure of this text-form in terms of the relations between one clause and another, and then recognize the connection between one paragraph and another and how these clauses make up the whole constituent. All these issues will be investigated respectively in the following sections.

5.1.1 Relations between constituents of editorials at a low level

It should be pointed out that an investigation of the semantic structure or the relations between the constituents of any text is doomed to be incomplete without an analysis of how one clause is related to another (Beekman & Callow, 1988). Similarly, Halliday (1977); Hasan (1973, 1975); Jacobsen (1957) suggest that the best way to understand a text is to describe its generic structure. In doing so, we are able to see how the constituents of the text are connected, and which connectives play an essential role in signalling these constituents. From a translation perspective, sometimes, there are explicit relators in our editorials in terms of which we could label the type of relation involved; at other times, this particular relation has to be inferred from the content of the clause.

For convenience of reference, our analysis will be carried out in two phases: the first phase is identifying the relations...
between one clause and another, and the second phase is
specifying the overall relation of the unit within the larger
semantic unit (i.e. paragraph, section, etc.). The analysis of
the relations between smaller semantic units is presented below:

**Clauses (1)-(5)**

The text-producer here attempts to achieve his main
objectives by showing the reader the positive aspect of this
editorial text-form, (i.e. Jordan still keeps its promise); he
wants the reader to agree with him on the points he is arguing,
etc. In order to give an impression of authenticity to the
reader, the text-producer chooses to focus on the speech and the
means by which the speech is broadcast (i.e. **al-idā′ah**
**al-birītāniyyah** 'The British Broadcasting Corporation'). This
means, by which the speech is broadcast, has unequivocal
significance in the Arab mind as well as in the Arab world. All
this, from the text-producer's perspective, highlights his main
rhetorical purposes. Consider the following clauses:

1. fi ḥadīthi al-ḥusayn alladī baṭṭat-hu
   in speech the Hussein which transmit-it
   al-idā′ati al-birītāniyyah,
   the broadcasting corporation the British
   akīrān, akkada jalālatu-hu
   lately affirmed majesty-his

2. cālā anna al-cālāqāt al-urduniyyata
   on that the relations the Jordanian
   al-filistīniyyah mumayyazah
   the Palestinian special
3. wa kāṣṣatan wa anna al-urdunna
   and particularly and that the-Jordan
fi jamīc al-ahwālī lam
in all the-circumstances did not
yatakallā c'an abnā'i filistīn
abandon about children Palestine

4. wa lan yatakallā c'an-hum, aw
   and will not abandon about-them, or
   c'an wājibi-hi nahwa-hum,
   about duty-it towards-them,

5. ilā an yasta'īdū ḥuqūqa-hum
   till that restore-them rights-them
   al-kāmilah, c'alā turābi-him al-wataniy
   the-complete, on dust-their the-national

(1) In his recent speech, broadcast by the B.B.C., his Majesty King Hussein of Jordan affirmed (2) that the Jordanian-Palestinian relation is very special (3) since Jordan, under all circumstances, has not abandoned (4) and will not abandon the Palestinian people (5) until they are granted their full rights on their own national territory.

An examination of the above clauses shows that these clauses are related in terms of content. Thus, clause (1) opens with the presentation of the event fi hādīt al-husayn 'in Al-Hussein's speech'; it also opens with the presentation of a temporal reference akīran 'recently' and the means al-idā'ah al-biritāniyyah 'the B.B.C.', by which this event has come about. These characteristics are given here to supply the significant background information for the preparation of what comes next, which is the 'thesis'. It was suggested in Chapter (4) that according to Beekman & Callow (1988), clauses that express spatial or temporal meanings are clauses that orientate the
reader by making him expect that an argument is about to follow. Similarly, Winter (1977), Hoey (1983), and Jordan (1980, 1988) (see Chapter 1) argue that time and location/space references are typical characteristics of background information. In this study, this background information will be referred to as 'situation'. This constituent is presented in the Diagram that follows:

![Diagram](image)

Diagram (14)
Manifestation of the constituent 'situation'.

It should be remarked that the above clauses are related in terms of their elaborating on the content of the speech. Between these clauses, there is also a system of relations. For example, clause (1) is linked with clause (2) through a 'content relation'. This relation is signalled by *that*. According to Beekman & Callow (1979, 1988); Cantarino (1975), the particle *that* often introduces a statement; its function is to
complete the preceding clause by answering the question 'what'.

Using Winter's (1977) question-answer technique, this relation can be manifested through the following question:

Question: What was broadcast by the B.B.C. recently?

Answer: King Hussein's speech. (event)

The above question-answer technique is used only for the sake of exposition. Other characteristics such as space and time can also be manifested through the same technique. As for the relation of 'content', it frequently occurs in this form.

Clause (2) is connected with clause (3) through a relation of 'reason-result'. The 'reason' relation is \textit{wa kăssatan wa anna al-urdunna... 'since Jordan...'}, and the result is \textit{cālā anna al-cālāgāt al-urduniyyah al-filistīnīyyah mumayvazah 'that the Jordanian-Palestinian relation is very special'}. This relation is signalled by the expressions \textit{wa kassatan wa anna 'since'}.

Within these clauses, there is a parallel construction between clauses (2) and (3); this parallel construction is realized through the expressions \textit{anna al-cālāgāt} and \textit{wa anna al-urdunna}. It has been suggested in Chapter 3 (see p. 137) that the text-producer, in cases like these, uses these devices to show how already used structure and patterns can be reused for the purpose of emphasis (De Beaugrande & Dressier, 1981). This creates a rhetorical effect on the reader by underlining the relatedness of one clause to another. Such relatedness is relayed by a relation of coordination rather than subordination.

Also, between clauses (3) and (4), the expressions \textit{lam vatakallā}
'an abnā' filistīn 'did not abandon the people of Palestine' and 
lan vatakallā 'anhum ' will not abandon them', utilize 
syntactically and phonologically parallel structures which have 
contrasting meanings in terms of tense: the first makes use of 
lam 'did not' in which past tense is expressed; and the second 
uses lan 'will not' in which future tense is expressed. The 
parallel frame of this clause is (particle + V + PP): particle 
lam 'did not'; the verb vatakallā 'abandon' and the prepositional 
phrase abnā' filistīn 'people of Palestine'. Through this 
syntactic parallelism, the text-producer expresses coordinate 
ideas in coordinated forms. This is done by using the simplest 
form of parallelism, (i.e. putting equivalent units in a series 
of similar grammatical construction). This kind of parallelism 
involves a series of items that can emphasize or create certainty 
and confidence within the text. As Koch (1982) argues, 
parallelism signals the fact that clauses which are different in 
content are similar in purpose of discourse. This kind of 
parallelism expresses the paradigmatic structure within the text. 
Koch says:

"Parallelism of this sort is perhaps the 
clearest example of paradigmatic patterning 
in discourse; items which are similar in 
syntactic form are interpreted as members of 
a common paradigmatic class of items."

Koch (1982: 177)

Clauses (4) and (5) are connected by a relation of 
'temporality'. The temporal relation is signalled here by the 
preposition ilā 'to' or 'till'. As Cantarino (1975, 2: 290-291)
argues, *jlä* "expresses the direction to or toward an aim or goal"; therefore, it can sometimes refer to a 'purpose relation'. However, *jlä* in the above clause does not refer to persons or goals, but to the point in time up to which (X) lasts. Using the rank and indentation system presented in Chapter 4 (pp. 159-166), all the above relations are represented as follows:

(1) ____________________ content
(2) ____________________ reason-result
(3) ____________________ reason-result
(4) ____________________ temporal

**Clauses (6)-(12)**

Turning to this semantic unit, it can be realized that these clauses add further information to the 'event'. That is, they tend to develop the argument and take it one step further. Before we go further into the analysis, we need to present the clauses in question; these clauses are listed below:

6. *wa jä'a hädä al-ḥadît*  
   and came this the-speech

7. *ta'bîran can al-ta'yîdi al-mustamir*  
   expression about the-support the-continuous
   li al-intifâdah,  
   to the-uprising,

8. *wa hiya tadkulu cäma-hä al-țañî..*  
   and it enter year-its the-second..

9. *wa difâcan can maṣrû'liyyati-hä,*  
   and defence about legitimacy-its,

10. *wa dacwatan li al-ḍamîr al-çâlamiy,*  
    and call to the-conscience the-world,
11. li yutarjima taqatufu-hu
in order to translate sympathy-its
maqahä, ila camalin yucajjilu qaqa
with-it, to action hurry up hold
al-mu'tamari al-dawly
the-conference the-international

12. li yatasannä tanfidu
in order to able carry out
al-hal al-qaqiqiy, alladä
the-solution the-real, which
yuqidä al-salama wa al-istiqra
restore the-peace and the-stability
ilä al-mintaqah...
to the-region...

(6) The King's speech came as (7) an expression of Jordan's continuing support for the uprising (8) which is entering its second year, (9) a defence of its legitimacy, (10) and a call to the conscience of the international community (11) to translate its sympathy with the uprising into urgent action (12) to convene an international conference that leads to a genuine solution and the restoration of peace and stability in the region.

It is very clear that the text-producer in clause (6) recourses to the event of the preceding clauses through the expression hadä al-hadit. This clause is followed by clause (7) which adds more information by presenting the purpose of what comes in clause (6). Clause (8) is an embedded clause which also clarifies and completes the preceding clause (i.e., clause 7). The former is followed by clauses (9) and (10) which are related by purpose to clause (7). These two clauses are followed by clauses (11) and (12) which are supportive clauses whose main function is to provide the main purpose, as the text-producer
sees it, behind the 'call to the conscience of the International community', دَاذِةُ الوَلَدِ الْكَلاَمِ, as implemented through the King's speech.

It has been suggested in Chapter 3 that support clauses are extremely significant in argumentative discourse, particularly in material where one argues and attempts to prove a point. This is evident in the above clauses where each developmental clause - as it develops or clarifies the argument - is followed by clauses that substantiate it. This kind of substantiation comes as a result of presenting purposes and reasons why a particular event has taken place. The diagram that follows shows the hierarchical structure of these clauses with respect to one another and the type of relation involved:

(6) ___________________________ purpose
(7) ___________________________ purpose
(8) ___________________________ temporal
(9) ___________________________ purpose
(10) __________________________ purpose
(11) __________________________ purpose
(12) __________________________ purpose

**Clauses (13)-(16)**

While the first two semantic units provide the reader with an introduction to the subject, which indicate that the discussion has just begun, the following two units develop the argument further. These clauses open with الوَلَدُ الْكَلاَمِ 'Al Hussein chose...', indicating an expression of modality. It
was suggested that modal clauses express the text-producer's point of view (see Section 4.5). As Lodge (1977: 46) and Hodge & Kress (1988) argue, a modal clause is mainly concerned with the attitudes of the text-producer towards the 'information content'. It describes the stance of the participant towards an event. However, in the above clauses, the text-producer expresses his opinion explicitly, while expressing the content of the speech implicitly, because the internal structure of these clauses is not the text-producer's evaluation but that of presenting the content. In the light of this, consider the following clauses:

13. wa ʿāṭara al-ḥusayn,  
   and chose the-Hussein,

14. an yunabbiha mujaddidan  
   that warn-he newly

15. ilā anna al-ṣirāṭ al-nāšiba fī  
   to that the-conflict the-ongoing in
   al-миnṭaqaḥ lā yuhaddidu-hā... waḥda-hā  
   the-region not threaten-it... alone-it

16. wa innasā yuhaddidu al-salāma al-cālamiy..  
   and but threaten the-peace the-world..

(13) King Hussein took the opportunity (14) to repeat his warning once again (15) that the ongoing conflict does not just threaten the region alone (16) but it threatens the whole world peace.

As pointed out, clause (13) is a modal clause; this clause is followed by clause (14) which introduces the content; it directs the attention of the reader to a certain part of the speech. In the same way, clause (15) is linked with the preceding clauses.
through a 'content relation'; this clause adds more information about the speech particularly about King Hussein's warning, and in so doing contributes to the further development of the argument.

It can be seen that the above clauses present, among other things, the King's speech as perceived by the text-producer; they also develop the text-producer's argument by taking it to a different kind of discussion, (i.e. the King's warning and not the Jordanian-Palestinian relation). Moreover, there is a contrast relation between clauses (15) and (16); this relation is signalled by the particle innamā 'but'. Although there is a contrast relation among these two clauses, clause (16) expands also on clause (15), in which the function of the formula 'not only...but also' is likely to be emphatic. As Al-Jurjani (1983) argues, innamā has a pragmatic function; it emphasizes the point it introduces. Also, Cantarino (1975, 3: 207) argues, apart from being an emphatic particle, innamā 'but' signals to the reader that the proposition in clause (16) is an emphatic restatement of the proposition in clause (15). The particle innamā is not an adverb as Wright (1967, 1: 285) points out, because it connects two structurally independent clauses. Also, the slot that this particle fills can also be filled by other coordinating conjunctions such as 'bal', 'lakinna', 'but', 'however', etc. The interrelation between the clauses under discussion is represented as follows:

* A proposition is defined here as the minimal semantic unit consisting of a concept or a combination of concepts which communicates an Event or Relation (Beekman & Callow 1979, 1988).
Clause (17)

As for this clause, it is developmental, because it aims, among other things, at extending the theme of the article by clarifying and highlighting the previous four clauses, indicating that the King has given his warning a number of times to various branches of the international media. Here is the clause under discussion:

17. wa kāna jalālatu-hu, qad wajjaha al-taḥdíra
and was Majesty-his, just address the-warning
daṭa-hu, gayra marratin kilāla al-aḥādīth allātī
self-it, not only once during the-speeches which
afḍā bi-hā.. min qabl ila ḍadādin min
gave in-them.. from before to number from
al-ṣuḥufi wa al-iḍāḥātī wa ʃabakātī
the-papers and the-broadcast corp. and networks
al-ṭilfizyawn al-ṣālamiyāh..
the-television the-world..

(17) King Hussein has given this same warning repeatedly on previous occasions to a number of international newspapers, radio stations, and television networks.
The above clause is developmental; it is connected with the preceding clauses by certain cohesive devices; these devices sometimes link many clauses cataphorically (i.e. forward) and sometimes anaphorically (i.e. backward). Clause (17) is linked anaphorically with the previous clause through the repetition of the lexical items al-tahdīra dātu hu 'the same warning'. Also, this clause is connected by the repetition of the lexical item jalālatu-hu 'His Majesty'. As Halliday & Hasan (1976); Hasan (1978, 1979, 1980, 1984a) point out (see Chapter 3), these reiterated lexical items serve to tie the elements of the text together and establish continuity and coherence within it. This notion of lexical repetition will be investigated in more detail in the next chapter. Meanwhile, according to the rank and indentation system, clause (17) is represented as follows:

(17) __________________ developmenta

Looking at the above clauses from a different angle, it can be seen that the interaction of elements permeates the structure of these clauses. There is a continuous representation of our conception of reality; a representation of our habits of doing, sensing, feeling things. All this takes the form of a process. The term 'process' is used here to cover all phenomena to which a specification of time may be attached (Kress, 1976). Kress argues that the term 'process' refers to anything that is expressed by a verb, event (whether it is a physical event or
not), state or relation. This notion of 'process' is clarified in the following examples:

(1) Can you see the airplane? (mental-perception)
(2) Adam is shooting the ball. (action-actor)
(3) Amy is a nurse. (relational-attribute)

Accordingly, a process can be mental (see, please, believe, say); action (throw, shoot, etc.); and it can be relational (equative, attribute). There are however some relational phenomena which are not processes and a specification of time cannot be attached to them. The example 'two and two equals four' is a case in point. These processes enable us to see the interaction of the text-producer with the text; they also enable us to see the interplay within the text-producer's mind. Some of these types of processes are realized in the above clauses; this realization is presented as follows:

\[
\begin{array}{c}
\text{Actor-Process Relation} \\
\begin{array}{c}
\text{Representation of Actor-Process relation in the text-form under discussion}
\end{array}
\end{array}
\]
It is clear from the above clauses that a mental process is employed throughout the preceding clauses. A mental process contains, within itself, different types of processes such as perception, reaction, cognition, and verbalization. However, as the above diagram shows, the type of process involved here is verbal (i.e. batta, akkada, hadīt, etc.).

Clauses (18–25)

It can be seen that these clauses open with a modal. As was suggested earlier, this indicates the text-producer's personal judgement. Thus, the clause, wa ganiyyun can al-qawl 'needless to say', expresses the text-producer's attitude towards the speech made (Hodge & Kress, 1988; Lodge, 1977). This type of modality is chosen by the text-producer to express his evaluation of the event (i.e. the King's speech). Similarly, Halliday (1970b) argues that modality is an assessment of probability; it is a form of participation by the speaker in the speech event. Halliday argues that through modality, the speaker associates with a thesis an indication of its status in his own judgement; he intrudes, and takes up a position (Halliday 1970b: 335). For the sake of exposition, let us look at the clauses in question:

18. wa ganiyyun can al-qawl, and needless to the-saying,

19. anna hādā kulluh huwa tajsidun li that this all is embodiment to
al-iltizāmi  al-qawmiy  alladī
the-commitment  the-national  which

yatamassaku  bi-hi  al-urdun..  wa
holds  in-it  the-Jordan..  and

alladī  ya'kūdu  madā-hu  min
which  take  dimension-it  from

kilāli  tanqiyati  al-ajwā'i  al-carabiyyah,
through  purifying  the-climates  the-Arabic,

wa  al-camali  al-jūd  ālā
and  the-action  the-serious  on

ḥāsdi  al-ṭaqāti  al-carabiyyah..
assemble  the-resources  the-Arabic..

20.  wa  qad  tabaddā  hāṣa  al-camal
and  verily  manifest  this  the-action

awdāha  mā  yakūnu  fi  al-masā
clearest  ma  is  in  the-endavour

alladī  yaqūmu  bi-hi  jalālatu-hu
which  makes-he  in-it  Majesty-his

21.  li  iqāmati  kiyānin  ṣarabiyyin
in  order  to  establish  entity  Arab

yadummu  al-duwala  al-carabiyyah  ḥarqiy
include  the-states  the-Arabic  eastern

al-bahri  al-abyad  al-mutawassīt
the-sea  the-white  the-middle

22.  wa  alladī  min  ṣa'ni-hi  an  yabcata
and  which  from  sake-its  to  send

'al-jabhata  al-ṣarqiyyah
the-front  the-eastern

23.  wa  yutīha  li  al-arab  an
and  allow  to  the-Arabs  that

yumārisū  al-kayrāt  al-munāsibah
exercise-they  the.choices  the-suitable

24.  li  isti'ādati  ḥuqūqi-him
in  order  to  restore  rights-their
(18) Needless to say, (19) all this underlies Jordan's steadfast commitment to the Arab nations whose goal is to clear the air in the Arab world, and to take serious steps to mobilize Arab resources (20) This is demonstrated most clearly in His Majesty's endeavour (21) to establish an Arab entity comprising the East Mediterranean Arab countries (22) with the aim of reviving the Eastern front (23) and providing Arabs with appropriate choices (24) to restore their rights (25) and to establish a just and comprehensive peace in the region.

Here, the text-producer is specifying more precisely what his position is. Also, through these clauses, he expresses his own assessment or evaluation of the King's speech. What is meant by 'evaluation' here is the assessment of whether 'something' is good or bad (Leech, 1981; Hoey 1979, 1983, and Jordan, 1980, 1988). It can also be seen as whether something is successful or not (Hoey 1983). Evaluation stems from whether the topic is interpreted positively or negatively by the text-producer; it attempts to present to the reader the truth of the statement made. Here, the text-producer attempts to show the good aspects of the speech; he evaluates this speech, as he perceives of it, through its semiotic values (i.e its cultural and signifying implications) and presents it to the reader as signs, signs of agreement or rebuttal. As suggested in Chapter 3, according to Jakobson (1971: 698) 'every message is made up of signs', and therefore, as far as the reader is concerned, this 'editorial
text-form' stands as a positive sign, sign of debate, presentation of truth. This is what makes editorials have an affect on the reader, because the reader attempts to assess the text-producer's intentional or pragmatic meaning and the attachment of his personal judgement. In this respect, Newmark (1988) argues that when one investigates the purpose of the text, particularly from the author's point of view, one is in fact investigating the pragmatic meaning of the text. For example, from clauses (18-25), the text-producer's main focus here is on the purpose of Jordan's support for the uprising. There is an exposition of all the reasons that make the presented speech positive. For instance, in addition to the internal structure of clause (18), which is in itself an expression of the text-producer's attitude, clause (19) has positive and evaluative expressions that illuminate his main position. The expressions tajṣīdun 'embodiment', ṭanqīyah 'purification', and jād 'serious' are all positive evaluative expressions which bring out the evaluative element of this editorial text-form. Also, there are other quality-attributing expressions in clauses (20-24); these expressions are awdah 'clearer', masīḥ 'endeavour'. These expressions indicate again that the text-producer injects his own personal and positive assessment of the speech. However, evaluation here has not only been looked at in terms of evaluative lexical items, but also in terms of the internal evaluative structure of the text. This evaluation is implemented through certain signalling and communicative devices such as the modal clauses and the internal propositional content of the text.
In other words, clauses (19) and (20) evaluate the speech positively; these two clauses are followed by clause (21) which supports and substantiates the preceding clauses by presenting the purpose of 'Jordan’s commitment' towards the Arabs in general and the Palestinians in particular. The text-producer here presents this kind of purpose as a justification for what he claims. Therefore, the constituent 'substantiation' of the text-producer seems to be indispensable in order to justify the claims made. To culminate this kind of effect, the same phenomenon is repeated again between clauses (22) and clauses (23-25), as these clauses aim at supporting the main clause.

While the text-producer’s evaluation of this text-form is positive (i.e. he is arguing for the thesis), there are other cases where his evaluation of a certain thesis is negative (i.e. he is counter-arguing). The following editorial, which is about an incident in which the Americans shot down a civilian Iranian aeroplane, is a case in point:

6. inna mas'ūliyyata majlisī al-āmmī
   inna responsibility council the-security
   al-dawliyy allā yaqīfa āinda jarīmatī
   the-intl. is-not stand about crime
   isqāti al-ţā'īrah
   shooting the-aeroplane

7. wa an yuḳaṣṣisa waqta-hu wa
   and to devotes time-its and
   munāqaṣāti-hi la-hā,
   discussions-its to-it,
(6) The responsibility of the International Security Council should not stop at the crime of the shooting down of this aeroplane, (7) nor at devoting its time and discussion to it, (8) rather it should see it and deal with it as part and parcel of the continuing war between Iraq and Iran. (9) The Council should also look into it in terms of the Iraqi's position, (10) which seeks peace and stability as opposed to the contrary stance of the Iranian regime.

It is obvious from the above clauses that the text-producer restates the responsibilities of the International Security Council (ISC) in an evaluative manner. He comments on this issue
by saying that the responsibility of the ISC does not stop at the
crime of the shooting down of the aeroplane, but should take into
account other activities that have contributed to the incident.
We can see that this kind of evaluation is negative as the text-
producer is not content with the performance of the ISC.
Therefore, he is counter-arguing. In general, the text-producer,
while arguing, has two alternatives: he can argue for a
particular 'event' or he can argue against it. In both cases,
the text-producer's main concern is to show the negative or the
positive aspects of the event. Following this is, of course, his
own substantiation. These two types of evaluation are presented
as follows:

Text-producer's evaluation

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{pro-argument} & \quad \text{counter-argument} \\
(\text{i.e. positive,} & \quad \text{(i.e. negative,} \\
\text{assertive, etc.)} & \quad \text{oppositional, etc.)}
\end{align*}
\]

Diagram (16)
Types of Evaluation

Returning to our analysis of the editorial text-form, there
is a process involved within this constituent: namely 'material
process'. This and other types of processes show what is
involved within the text (i.e. agents, participants, affecting
and affected entities). The following diagram shows the lexical
expressions as well as the type of relation involved:
In analyzing the relations, attention should be paid to the explicit as well as the implicit cues within the text. As Thompson & Mann (1988) suggest, in signalling the meaning of the text, we have to relate meaning to conjunctions, grammar of clause combining, non-signalled parataxis, etc. Within the above clauses, therefore, there are words that signal explicitly the affinities between different types of clauses. These show the type of connection involved. For example, the relation between clauses (18) and (19) is that of 'content'. This relation is introduced by the particle anaa. As Cantarino (1975, 2: 234-235) argues, this particle introduces a statement which is understood as independent and complete as a syntactical unit. This subordinating conjunction is followed by a noun or pronoun in the accusative case. There is also a 'means-purpose' relation that exists between clauses (20) and (21), and clause (21) states the purpose of what comes in clause (20). The same relation exists
between clauses (22)-(25). These kinds of semantic relations holding between clauses (18)-(25) are represented as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Clause</th>
<th>Relation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(18)</td>
<td>modal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(19)</td>
<td>content</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(20)</td>
<td>content</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(21)</td>
<td>purpose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(22)</td>
<td>purpose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(23)</td>
<td>purpose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(24)</td>
<td>purpose</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(25)</td>
<td>purpose</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Clauses (26)-(29)

These clauses open with *wa hākadā* 'accordingly', indicating that the main constituent of these clauses is that of a 'conclusion'. The text-producer attempts here to wrap up the whole text-form by summarizing the main arguments; he also supplies the reader with the main purpose of Jordan's support for the uprising. In specific terms, clause (26) indicates a concluding remark, followed by clause (27) which gives the purpose for Al-Hussein's adherence to the uprising. Clause (28) indicates again a conclusion within a conclusion; this is expressed through the expression *wa bidālika* 'hence' (i.e. based on clause 27). Following clause (28), there is clause (29) and (30) whose main function is to express 'time'. Here are the clauses under discussion:

26. *wa hākadā, yadkul li al-ta'yīdu* li and so enters the-support to al-intifādah al-lā ṣumārisu-hu al-husayn, the-uprising which exercises-it the-Hussein, ṭawran jādīdan, yatamaṭṭalu fi ta'hīli stage new, represented in qualify
Accordingly, King Hussein’s support for the uprising has entered a new phase (27) which gives new import to autonomous Arab power. (28) In doing so, King Hussein has given the uprising (29) which is now entering its second year (28) a significant boost.

Within this dependent semantic unit (i.e. it is dependent upon the preceding clauses), various devices are important means for signalling the semantic content of this text-form. These include the relations holding between one clause and another. For example, the unifying relation between clauses (26) and (27) is that of 'purpose'; this relation is manifested through the signalling particle ُلِي 'in order to'. As Wright (1967, 2: 150) argues, the particle ُلِي, originally a preposition, indicates the
intentions of the text-producer, and therefore expresses a 'purpose' relation.

There is another type of relation between clauses (27) and (29); this relation is that of 'means-result'. These clauses are followed by two supporting clauses: one is an embedded clause which is realized by the conjunction wa followed by the pronoun hiya and signals a 'temporal' relation. The other is a complementary kind of relation, since it is connected with (28) and considered to be part of it. Therefore, it completes it. The relations in question are hierarchically and lineally represented as follows:

(26) ____________ conclusion
(27) ____________ purpose
(28) ____________ means-result
(29) ____________ temporal

Clauses (30)-(33)

It can be seen that these clauses also indicate concluding remarks. However, the concluding remarks here are different from the preceding ones in that clauses (26)-(29) summarize the whole argument, whereas clauses (30)-(33) emphasize the main point and give some kind of implication behind Jordan's stand towards the uprising. That is, they express the fact that this stand should be an example for all Arab countries to follow. For ease of reference, here are the relevant clauses:
(30) The time has now come for the Arabs (31) to increase their level of support for the uprising Jordan is working to achieve, (32) and to bring about a situation in the Arab world, (33) in order to confront the challenges in the way of establishing the national entity which King Hussein is calling for.

It is obvious that these clauses attempt to emphasize certain aspects of this form of text. This is represented by the particle qad. This particle adds certainty to the text-producer's intention of the whole argument. As Wright (1967) points out, this particle, being 'aspectual', is often called by the grammarians 'the particle of expectation', and it is said to be used to indicate assertion and certainty.
There is a set of relations holding between these clauses. Clause (30) stresses what follows in clauses (31)-(33) by expressing 'time'. Although this clause is, superficially, a time expression, it seems to be functioning like a modal here simply because it expresses the text-producer's opinion. This clause is followed by a supporting clause which provides a purpose for this emphasis. Also, the text-producer here draws some implications as what should be done; he attempts to draw his implications in an amplified and exhortative manner; this is done by providing support for his statement.

On the basis of the above observations, it can be seen that there are two kinds of conclusion: first, there is a conclusion which summarizes the main arguments; this is manifested in clauses (26)-(29). Second, there is a conclusion by argumentation (i.e. implication, inference, etc.). In this type of conclusion, the text-producer does not summarize his main arguments, nor does he repeats his main objectives. Rather, he gives advice to the reader; he recommends to him certain things or examples that go along with his basic goals. All these are manifested in clauses (30)-(33). These two types of exhortative conclusions are represented as follows:

Exhortative Conclusion

- by summary
  (i.e. summary of the main arguments)
- by argumentation
  (i.e. implication, inference, etc.)

Diagram (18)
Types of Exhortative Conclusions
Within clauses (30)-(33), there are different levels of connection involved. These levels correspond to different levels of communication. For example, in clause (30), the relation of conclusion is in its emphatic form *la qad hāna al-waqt* 'time has now come'; this clause emphasizes and expresses a temporal meaning (Cantarino, 1975, 1: 67-68). This same clause is linked with that which follows through a 'purpose' relation, and this relation, as suggested before, is signalled by the particle *li* 'in order to'. According to Cantarino, *li* can perform several functions: it introduces a dependent clause; if the verb is finite, it is in the subjunctive; it can also be used to introduce the intention of the agent. However, the particle *li* in the above clause introduces a subordinate clause which does not introduce the agent's intention, but the result of the action or circumstance created by the action of the clause. One can see therefore that the particle *li* is used here to express a 'purpose' or the effect of the action of the preceding clause.

Following clause (31) is clause (32) which develops the argument by adding more information to it. This clause is connected with the preceding one through the repetition of the expressions *wa hādā huwa al-mustawa*, in which the two clauses are cohesively linked together. Clause (32) is considered here to comment on what comes in clause (31), and its relation to the preceding clause is that of 'comment'. There is another relation holding between clauses (32) and (33); this relation is that of 'purpose'. All these clauses are represented as follows:
Clauses (34)-(36)

These clauses draw some kind of implication in an exhortative manner; while they are also concluding remarks, they attempt to persuade the text-reader of all the arguments in the text. Here are the clauses in question:

34. inna al-urdunna
   emph. the-Jordan

35. (allaḏī kāna wa lā yazālu qaliṭan li which was and not still bastion to
       al-ṣumūd)..
       the-resistance..

34. yu'attiru ka cādati-hi an yakūna fi
    choose as habit-its to is/be in
    al-talīqah, taṭwīran li al-adā'
    the-lead, developing to the-performance
    al-ʿarabiya..
    the-Arab..

36. wa hāḍā huwa al-ṣamal al-laḏī yatajawazu
    and this is the-action which transcend
    al-taḥbīра can al-maṣācīr ilā
     the-expression about the-feelings to
       al-ḥaḍā'i al-ḥaḍīqiyy..
      the-giving the-real..

(34) Jordan (35) which was a bastion of resistance continues to be so; (34) it has chosen, as usual, to take the lead in developing Arab capabilities. (36) In doing so, (Jordan) has
transcended mere sentiment, and has made a genuine and practical contribution to the Arab cause.

This semantic unit opens with an emphatic particle *inna*; this particle emphasizes the clause it introduces without any connecting value (Al-Jurjaniy 1983). As Cantarino (1975, 2: 232) argues, *inna* can be used at "the very beginning of the sentence as long as its emphatic character permits it, and it can be combined with coordinating conjunction without any change in meaning."

There is an embedded clause following clause (34) whose main function is to comment on one element of the preceding one. Clause (35) is linked with clause (34) through the relative pronoun *alladī* 'which', followed by part of clause (34) which in turn completes the previous clauses by clarifying them. Clause (36) is an exhortative one; it attempts to remind the reader of the argument by commenting on it. This clause is linked with the preceding one through an anaphoric cohesive device *hādā* 'this', by which these two clauses are connected (Halliday & Hasan 1976).

Using rank and indentation, these clauses are represented as follows:

(34) ____________     emphatic
(35) ____________     comment
(34) ____________     comment
(36) ____________     comment

To sum up, this analysis has been made to investigate the semantic structure of editorials. An attempt has been made to identify the propositional content as well as the main
constituents of these texts. To this effect, relations between
smaller semantic units have been identified, as well as the
relationship of these units to one another. These relations are
represented in Diagram (19) on the following page.

As the diagram shows, editorials cohere through the use of
causal relations. These relations are defined here in terms of
reason-result, means-purpose, condition-consequence, contrast,
concession-contraexpectation, and grounds-conclusion. Sometimes
causal relations are called 'Associative' relations in Beekman &
Callow's sense. All these relations are clearly indicated in the
diagram below. For ease of reference, the following table shows
the levels of operations as well as the frequency of these types
of relations:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Level of Frequency</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Type of Clause relation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Content</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Causal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temporal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Developmental</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Modal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emphatic</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table (3)
Levels of Operation and Frequency
of Types of Clause Relations

As the table shows, causal relations are typical relations
of argumentation, especially editorials. Beekman & Callow
Diagram (19)

Linear representation and type of clause relations of text
(1988: 289) argue that in texts or in material in which argumentation or proving a point is involved, causal relations will be the means by which both larger and smaller semantic units of text will be connected. Similarly, Rudolph (1988) argues that causal relations are typical relations found in argumentation. He states:

"Causal and conditional relations are used in argumentation, the subordinate clause expressing the argument; not because - but because, if. The consequence of the argument is presented as a result; hence."

Rudolph (1988: 124)

In explaining other causal connecting relations, Rudolph points out that causality has great value in argumentative discourse, as these relations have a psychological impact on the cognitive operations of the text-reader.

Furthermore, Kress & Hodge (1979: 17) argue that editorials are "the place where the process of selection and assimilation of rewriting and transformation are most dense". That is, editorial text-producers tend to highlight participant relations that strengthen their arguments (e.g. the ultimate goal of the shooting down of the aeroplane), and obscure those participant relations that weaken their arguments. For example, clauses (11 13) (see Appendix B9) tend to focus on the Iranian regime as the main cause of the aeroplane shooting, while putting less emphasis on the United States, which committed the crime.
From a different perspective, there are various kinds of information presented in editorials. Therefore, for translation purposes, a text-producer must learn information and understand it thoroughly in order to be able to convey it convincingly to the outside reader. Kress & Hodge (1979) argue that editorials are complex and revealing text-forms; they present a complex judgement or process. Kress & Hodge (1979) go further in saying that in order to understand any process, causality is of decisive significance. Even though Kress & Hodge make the point that editorials do not always show this particular feature, they argue that when the causal steps are clearly indicated (those who started an action are specified, the effects are shown, and those affected by such actions are mentioned) then we, as text-receivers, can be sure that our judgement is clearly justified and made on 'reasonably secure grounds' (ibid: 18). This can easily be seen in our editorial text-forms where these kinds of processes and this type of causal relations have a significant role to play. This kind of causality Kress & Hodge are talking about is very evident in our examined editorials. For example, the editorial text-form B9, (See Appendix B9), deals with the incident of the Americans shooting down of an Iranian civilian aeroplane. Here, the text-producer attempts to show the reader that there are two 'causes' for the shooting down of the Iranian airplane: the 'immediate cause' of the shooting down al-wilayāt al-muttaḥidah 'United States', and the 'ultimate cause' al-nizām al-irānīy 'the Iranian regime' -that which caused the U.S. to do...
this. The relation that is manifested in this process is represented as follows:

![Diagram](image.png)

Diagram (20)
Representation of a causal process

5.1.2 Relations between the constituents of editorials at a high level

In this section, an attempt will be made to analyze the larger semantic structure of the text-form under scrutiny. That is, how the larger units (i.e. units beyond the clause, etc.) are related to one another and what kind of relations hold between them (see p. 201 and p. 236). However, before getting down to this analysis, it should be pointed out that this text-form has eight larger semantic units; these units are investigated in Section 5.1.1, and demonstrated clearly in Diagram (19) above.
In what follows, then, an attempt will be made to specify the main constituent contained within each larger semantic unit. Such specification will be carried out as follows:

**Clauses (1)-(5)**

(1) In his recent speech, broadcast by the B.B.C., his Majesty King Hussein of Jordan affirmed (2) that the Jordanian-Palestinian relation is very special (3) since Jordan, under all circumstances, has not abandoned (4) and will not abandon the Palestinian people (5) until they are granted their full rights on their own national territory.

This semantic unit is mainly concerned with the content of the speech. This is to say that the main theme or idea of this semantic unit is that of content. While background information is provided by clause (1), the other remaining clause evolves around the content of the speech. Thus, the constituents 'situation' and 'thesis' occur simultaneously. From a different angle, it should be emphasized that the content of this semantic unit has been provided by the text-producer so as to provide background information for the reader; it also serves as preliminary information on which the reader relies to comprehend and follow the argument. Here is a representation of this basic constituent:

```
(1)  (2)  Background information and content of the speech
(3)  (4)  (thesis).
(5)
```
Clauses (6)-(12)

(6) The King's speech came as (7) an expression of Jordan's continuing support for the uprising (8) which is entering its second year, (9) a defence of its legitimacy, (10) and a call to the conscience of the international community (11) to translate its sympathy with the uprising into urgent action (12) to convene an international conference that leads to a genuine solution and the restoration of peace and stability in the region.

In this section, the text-producer attempts to create a stronger effect on the reader by introducing the main purpose of the speech. He shows, from his own perspective, that some of the purposes of the speech are: supporting the uprising, protecting its legitimacy and calling for a real solution. All these purposes attempt to create an inclination within the reader that the speech is genuine and therefore creates a stronger and more passionate effect. Above all, all these issues, as implemented through the text-producer's intention, attract the reader's attention and make him ask for more information about the speech. However, what has been presented in the first semantic unit (i.e. 1-5) is only part of the content of the speech. Therefore, the reader is still eager to know more about the content. The following representation shows what this semantic unit is mainly concerned with:

```
(6)  (7)  (8)  (9)  (10)  (11)  (12)
        Purpose of the speech
```
Clauses (13)-(16)

(13) King Hussein took the opportunity (14) to repeat his warning once again (15) that the ongoing conflict does not just threaten the region alone (16) but that it threatens the whole world.

The text-producer here goes back to stating the remaining part of the speech. One needs to emphasize here that this semantic unit is parallel with the semantic unit (1-5). This is mainly manifested through the text-producer's lexical choice akkada jalālatuḥu 'his majesty affirmed' and āṭara al-ḥusayn 'Hussein chose'. This kind of parallelism, being a rhetorical as well as text-building device (see Section 3.5), keeps the text receiver tuned to a definite perspective while simultaneously attracting new information or material to it. The cumulation of these parallel constructions acts as a reminder of the text producer's argument. The overall internal thematic structure of this semantic unit is shown below:

(13)→
(14)→
(15)→
(16)→

Clause (17)

(17) king Hussein has given this same warning repeatedly on previous occasions to a number of international newspapers, radio stations, and television networks.

It can be seen that this clause is dependent upon clauses (13-16). Also, it attempts to develop the argument by summarizing the observations that have preceded and taking them
onto a different level of argumentation. While this clause is dependent indirectly on all the preceding ones, such dependence is primarily directed towards clauses (13-16). Even though there is an element of 'dependency' between this clause and the preceding ones, the relation between this clause and the others is that of 'addition', as the text-producer is aiming at the development of his own argument. This has been done by explaining it and adding more information to it.

It follows from the preceding discussion that these semantic units are mainly concerned with the following aspects:

(1) Setting the scene for the main argument.
    (i.e. situation)

(2) Presenting the content of the speech.
    (i.e. thesis)

(3) Justifying the main purpose of the speech.
    (i.e. substantiation)

**Clauses (18)-(25)**

(18) Needless to say, (19) all this underlies Jordan's steadfast commitment to the Arab nations, whose goal is to clear the air in the Arab world, and to take serious steps to mobilize Arab resources (20) This is demonstrated most clearly by King Hussein's endeavour (21) to establish an Arab entity comprising the East Mediterranean Arab countries (22) with the aim of reviving the eastern front (23) and providing Arabs with appropriate choices (24) to restore their rights (25) and to establish a just and comprehensive peace in the region.
This section shows an interesting shift in focus; this shift does not occur only because of the employment of the modal clause *wa ganiyyun *can al-qawl 'needless to say', but also because of the internal evaluative structure of this constituent. It was suggested earlier (see Section 4.5) that modality is the speaker's participation in the speech; it is his assessment of the validity of what he is saying. Modality functions as to express the attitude and the feelings of the text-producer, but without the internal evaluative structure of the constituent itself, it will not be regarded as evaluative. If the internal structure is evaluative, the attitudes of the text-producer come as a result of the evaluativeness of the speech and as he perceives of it. Of course, evaluation permeates the structure of the whole text, but one has to delimit it within a particular constituent. For example, within this unit, there is an injection of personal judgement manifested in internal evaluative expressions such as *tangiyat al ajwā' al-carabiyyah 'clearing the air in the Arab world', *al-camal al-jād 'serious action', etc, in addition to the text-producer's modality. All these structures indicate the fact that the text-producer is evaluating the thesis and arguing for it. This he does from his own perception of reality.

It should be emphasized at this stage that evaluation and modality lie within Halliday's interpersonal component; they both express attitudes of the speaker; they can also express assessment of certain events. However, within this constituent,
evaluation is scattered all over this form of text; it tends to be amplified in this constituent. There is a frequent use of evaluative words whose main function is to reflect the text-producer's attitudes. At other times, there are words such as these that are used to present the content of the speech; or they may have been used within the King's speech; there is no involvement of the text-producer which usually stems from rhetorical devices or other expressive devices such as modal clauses and the evaluative propositional content. However, within this constituent, there is an involvement of the text producer, which is manifested in the employment of modal clauses and the internal evaluative structure of this unit. The following is a representation of this constituent:

Clauses (26)-(29)

(26) Accordingly, King Hussein's support for the uprising has entered a new phase (27) which gives new import to autonomous Arab power (28) In doing so, King Hussein has given the uprising, (29) which is now entering its second year, (28) a significant boost.

This semantic unit comes in the form of an exhortative conclusion which has been signalled by cohesive devices such as...
wa håkädâ. What is meant by exhortative conclusion here is that the text-producer attempts to culminate the effect of his message by summarizing the main arguments in a way that aims at encouraging, persuading, advising, and reminding the reader of his position. He also pinpoints briefly the main points he is trying to deliver. These goals can be easily achieved by reminding the reader of the purposes of the speech and the positive implications drawn from his perception of it. The representation of this semantic unit is shown below:

Clauses (30)-(33)

(30) The time has now come for the Arabs (31) to increase their level of support for the uprising Jordan is working to achieve, (32) and to bring about a situation in the Arab world, (33) in order to confront the challenges in the way of establishing the national entity which King Hussein is calling for.

This concluding semantic unit has a similar function to the preceding one. That is, it is also exhortative. However, the difference between this semantic unit and the preceding one is that the former is a conclusion by summary whereas the latter is a conclusion by argumentation. Also, one is inclined to believe that these clauses involve the provision of the reason of Jordan's support for the uprising. It is therefore considered to
be the most emphatic unit of this editorial, as the text-producer insists that time has come for all Arab countries to support the uprising. This is realized by the particle lagad in lagad hāna al-wagt which signals a definite modal and temporal meaning. The opening modal is employed here to stress certain aspects of 'time' with the effect that the text-producer's comments become exhortative. Here is a representation of this conclusion:

(30) Text-producer's exhortative conclusion (by argumentation)

Clauses (34)-(36)

(34) Jordan (35) which was a bastion of resistance continues to be so; (34) it has chosen, as usual, to take the lead in developing Arab capabilities. (36) In doing so, (Jordan) has transcended mere sentiment, and has made a genuine and practical contribution to the Arab cause.

This section attempts to emphasize a point. That is, the text-producer picks up here as well as in the preceding two units the main idea to stress it to the reader. The main arguments are stated briefly in the opening semantic units (i.e. 1-5, 6-16, and 17); here the text-producer is reiterating his arguments so as to emphasize them again. This emphasis is achieved by stating that all Arab countries now urgently need to follow Jordan in supporting the uprising. While this unit is emphatic by its very nature, it, in turn, creates exhortation whose main function is
to make the reader, at the final stage, believe in the main argument. The diagram that follows shows what this semantic unit is mainly talking about:

(34) Emphasis of the conclusion
(35) with exhortative commentary
(34)
(36)

It should be pointed out here that the last two semantic units are both exhortative. The text-producer, in this final section, aims at culminating the rhetorical effect through different persuasive devices. The purpose of devices such as emphasis and assertion is to make the reader commit himself more fully to a new viewpoint.

To sum up, the analysis of this editorial text-form has been conducted at two levels: at a low level (i.e. relations between clauses), and at a high level (i.e. relations between units larger than the clause). This analysis has been carried out to show the main constituents or the building blocks of editorials and the kind of clause relations typical of this form of argumentation; it has also been carried out to investigate the significance of these constituents for the process of translation. This aspect will be investigated more thoroughly in Chapter 7. Diagram (21) below demonstrates the semantic structure as well as the main constituents of the editorial text-form under discussion.
5.1.3 Cohesion manifestation of editorials

In order to account for all aspects of cohesion within editorial text-forms, attention should be paid not only to surface lexical cohesion (i.e. markers, etc.), but also to the propositional content or its coherence in which surface lexical items are cohesively related to the underlying structure. Of equal importance is also how cohesion expresses and relates one
constituent of the text to another. This is, in fact, what makes editorials hang together as connected and coherent texts-form.

To reflect on the manifestation of cohesion in editorials, it can be pointed out that there are certain aspects of cohesion within each constituent that have a great bearing on the meaning of editorials. For example, within the constituent 'situation and thesis', cohesion is manifested through elements of specificity and information density. That is, the text-producer attempts here to specify or single out the content or the Hallidayan ideational component of the text-form; he also attracts the text-reader by presenting new material to him. These elements are represented through the relations of content.

As for the constituent 'evaluation', cohesion is manifested through forms of 'judgement and assessment'; these are indicative elements of the text-producer's viewpoint of the external world. These forms of social expressions are represented by 'modality' and 'parallelism'.

The final constituent is the exhortative conclusion; this constituent is manifested through rhetorical and cohesive devices of emphasis, assertion, and notionl repetition. In this constituent, the text-producer tends to reiterate his main points in an emphatic manner so as to create confidence and certainty within the editorial. As for the notions of repetition and parallelism, these rhetorical and cohesive devices will be demonstrated later.
Based on the preceding analysis, it can be argued that editorials, as an argumentative text-form, have their own constituents structure. These constituents appear to be taking the following form:

```
  ▲
 ▼
 prostematic

 ▼
 ▼

 ▼
 ▼

 ▼
 ▼

 ▼
 ▼

 ▼
 ▼

 ▲
 ▼

Diagram (22)
The pattern of the text-producer's argumentation
```

It was suggested earlier (see p. 68) that editorials are statements of opinion; they express the text-producer's point of view as he conceives it within the community in which he appears. While there are expository passages in editorials, there are other argumentative passages too. As Brooks & Warren (1970: 58)
explain, the process of mixing in any type of discourse is never irresponsible. They argue that "the class report will always be, by its very nature, a piece of description. The novel, no matter how much exposition, description, or argument it may contain, will always be an example of narration". This means, as they suggest, that in a good piece of writing, the writer resorts to all kind of discourses so as to prove or effectively deliver his point. This is evident in our editorials where we find all kinds of discourses. However, the general discourse these text-forms manifest is that of argumentation. The complexity of these various kinds of information shows that these persuasive text-forms affect the reader by keeping him tuned to the argument through parallelism and repetition; this, in turn, influences his judgement and his perception of it.
6.0 Introduction

In the preceding chapter, it was demonstrated that editorial text-forms tend to cohere through causal relations. This was demonstrated through the analysis of clause relations and the interrelation between smaller units (i.e. clauses) and larger units (i.e. units larger than a clause), which make up the main constituents of editorials. This chapter attempts to investigate a textual phenomenon that is embodied within argumentative editorial text-forms, (i.e. repetition); it attempts to demonstrate later how repetition is regarded as a significant textual phenomenon in translation.

To this effect, this chapter is divided into three sections. Section (1) investigates the manifestations of repetition; it includes an examination of the role of Identity and Similarity Chains in the organization of editorials. Section (2) explains the psychological interpretation of repetition and the persuasive function it has upon the text-reader. Section (3) studies the nature and the function of parallelism; it also elucidates the significance of this textual phenomenon and its effect on the organization of the text as well as on the reader. All this is an attempt to give an account of the nature and the function of repetition, and to see what type of repetition these
argumentative text-forms employ in order to obtain effectiveness, coherence, and persuasion, and how such phenomena can be accounted for in translation.

The motive behind the exploration of these phenomena is that repetition, in general, plays an essential role in the continuity and coherence of editorials. While there are a few studies that have touched upon the notion of repetition (i.e. Koch 1982, 1983, Al-Jubouri 1983, Williams 1982, 1989), these studies have dealt with repetition within the clause level. This study attempts to avoid this because of the fact that the connection between clauses and that of paragraphs seems to be more revealing.

It is also to be noted that these studies have looked at repetition in terms of sporadic occurrences (i.e. see Al-Jubouri 1983, Koch 1982); they have not also demonstrated how to approach this phenomenon from a translation perspective. While these studies have in fact contributed to the manifestation of discourse connections in Arabic, they are still considered to be limited to intersentential or clausal connections. This imposes a considerable limitation on the discussion of the way in which cohesion in Arabic discourse is manifested and how these manifestations are correlated within the underlying structure of this discourse.

Furthermore, the studies that have been conducted on Arabic discourse have not studied thoroughly two or three essential cohesive and linking devices; these are the Identity Chain (IC)
and Similarity Chain (SC), and the repetition of the exact lexical item. It is the objective of this chapter to indicate that chains are a means for putting paragraphs together whereas the repetition of the exact lexical item is a means for putting together, not the paragraph, but the whole editorial text-form as a unified whole. All these are essential devices for ensuring connectivity within editorials, and understanding text-organization for translation purposes.

Before we go any further and investigate how repetition should be tackled in translation, it is to be emphasized that repetition is a means of cohesion. As Koch (1982, 1983) argues, repetition in Arabic is an important means of achieving connectedness among the constituents of texts; she argues that, apart from the linguistic effect of repetition, there is another rhetorical effect which is mainly concerned with repeating the same idea over and over again. This is what is called 'repetition of content' (De Beaugrande & Dressler 1981, Koch 1982, 1983). Repetition is an important means of persuasion in Arabic, and as she argues, repeating the argument and paraphrasing it is what persuades the text-reader. This is what is called 'presentation'.

Koch (1982: 195) claims that Arabic argumentation is persuasive because of its repeated presentation of the same idea over and over again and "not the logical structure". While this may partially be true, we actually wonder, taking into account the lack of clarification of what 'logical structure' means, how such repeated presentation tends to persuade without being
conveyed through a logical structure. Koch makes many
generalizations that lack evidence. For example, throughout her
descriptive study, Koch does not take into account the time,
space and circumstances under which the texts she has dealt with
were produced. These shortcomings have already been dealt with
in (Section 3.5).

It should be emphasized here that Koch's claims can be
partially applied to English as well as Arabic. As De Beaugrande
(1980) points out, repeating the same lexical item has a
psychological effect on the person's way of thinking; he argues
that this tendency seems to enforce and emphasize the presented
idea upon the text-reader's mind. Regarding this, De Beaugrande
says:

"Psychologically, recurrence should disturb
attention away from their components...if
frequency principles of learning apply,
the recurrent elements should be impressed
on memory."

De Beaugrande (1980: 135)

Repetition facilitates text comprehension (Manelis &
Yekovich 1976). This facilitation stems from the fact that the
exact lexical item (i.e. the same word) or a variant (i.e. co-
referentiality - he' for the lexical item 'Adam') has been
reiterated and in turn makes the text more easy to understand.
These aspects of repetition contribute significantly to the
cohesion and coherence of texts.
While these cohesive devices occur in almost all written texts, the occurrence of these devices tends to be subject to some kind of variation. That is, some textual and cohesive devices occur more frequently in some texts than others and they in turn contribute more to the semanticity and the continuity of texts. However, in this chapter, the main focus is not to investigate all cohesive devices in our editorials, but two important devices that have an effect upon the textuality and coherence of this argumentative text-form. These devices are the Identity and Similarity Chains and the Repetition of the Same Lexical Item. These two kinds of repetition bring together the basic elements of editorials. For example, the following text-form utilizes all kinds of repetition; but, one tends to see that there are certain kinds of repetition that occur frequently in our examined editorials text-forms. Here is the text-form exemplifying this point:

1. al-ittifāqu alladī tamma al-tawaṣṣulu
   the-agreement which was completed the-reaching
   ilayh bayna šātray al-yaṃan lī
   to-it between two-parts the-Yemen to
   ḫal al-masāʾīli al-ḥudūdiyyaṭi al-muʿallaqati
   solve the-matters the-boundaries the-hanging
   wa al-istiṭmāru al-muṣṭaraku lī al-naṭṭi
   and the-investment the-joint to the-oil
   bayna al-baladayn huwa kuṭwatun hāmmatun
   between the-two-countries is step important
   fi masīrāti al-yaṃani bi šātrayh,
   in course the-Yemen in two-parts,

2. wa huwa intīṣārun lī iṛādāti al-ṣaqli
   and it-is victory to will the-mind
الجهل،

3. ما لي إرادتي الحب وملامستي الحب،

الكرسي،

4. فإن الناس من أعداء أعداء مدينة صنعاء واليمن.

5. وإذا كان هناك حاجة ملحّة إلى النفط،

6. من أجل رفع البناء من أجلهم أيهم.

7. وإذا كان هناك معركة العربية لم تكن في.

8. إلى هذا الحدث اتفاقين حالي.

اليمن باليأس والرضا،

من أعداء العرب وعشرات،

العربية
9. 

الذين سنوا فسادًا كما جربناه وطمعناه.

الذين سنوا فسادًا مثله وطمعناه.

وانتهى المقاومون من الفراق.

وانتهى المقاومون من الفراق.

والنزاع والعنف بين الأخوة.

والنزاع والعنف بين الأخوة.

وكان ذلك لصالح العرب.

وكان ذلك لصالح العرب.

10. 

إننا نفتخرون في اليمن هويته القوية.

إننا نفتخرون في اليمن هويته القوية.

وهي نفع لشعب اليمن.

وهي نفع لشعب اليمن.

11. 

وهو ولي عزيز عليه نصاً في اليمن.

وهو ولي عزيز عليه نصاً في اليمن.

وهو ولي عزيز عليه نصاً في اليمن.

وهو ولي عزيز عليه نصاً في اليمن.

12. 

والله يزالون أن يكونوا الوصي على اليمن.

والله يزالون أن يكونوا الوصي على اليمن.

والله يزالون أن يكونوا الوصي على اليمن.

والله يزالون أن يكونوا الوصي على اليمن.

13. 

ولكن أن يكون الاستثمار المشترك.

ولكن أن يكون الاستثمار المشترك.

ولكن أن يكون الاستثمار المشترك.

ولكن أن يكون الاستثمار المشترك.

14. 

وأما الذين لا يرون في حفاظ واحد.

وأما الذين لا يرون في حفاظ واحد.

وأما الذين لا يرون في حفاظ واحد.

وأما الذين لا يرون في حفاظ واحد.

259
15. إننا يمانان فقيرون موحدون هم
تمثياً اليمن فقيراً موحداً
افلان العاشر من عشرين
لم تصل من وطن
غنيين متماثلين،
رخاء حاضرة،
16. فا إذا بنياء الأول اليمن أجل
لأن الدماء بنياء اليمن أبل
من النفط
17. ووحدةهم وكرامتهم
وكرامة وحدة
أهمية من الدولارات.
18. فا كيف
الإيجابية
19. إذا اتفاقاً بنياء الأول اليمن أجل
إذن بنياء اليمن مع
الاندماج الاستثماري والتجاري
لقياً لهم السلالات.
20. فا واجبوا هذه السلالات لفتي
واضعوا لأهلهم واعدة تطوير
وطنية
21. فا رفع مستوى حياة الناس
22. فا واجبوا لذلك الأهل الہد
واضعوا للكنف الأعلى للالتزام
الذروة من احتياجات
الذوق الراقي.
23. li dālik kullih qūbila īttifāqu
to this all met agreement

šaṭray al-yaman bi al-farḥati wa
two-parts the-Yemen by the-joy and

al-İgtibāṭi fi sufīfī al-ʿaṣbi
the-pleasance in lines the-people

al-yamaniy wa al-ṣuʿūb al-ʿarabiyah
the-Yemeni and the-peoples the-Arab

24. wa calā amali an yakūna hādā al-īttifāq
and on hope that is this the-agreement

fātiḥatan li īttifāqiyyātīn ukrā
preface to agreements others

bayna al-šaṭrayn
between the-two-parts

25. tuṣṭu li al-watani al-yamaniy
restores to the-home the-Yemeni

al-inujazza' karāmatahu
the-divided dignity-its

26. wa li al-ʿaṣbi al-yamaniy šurūṭa
and to the-people the-Yemeni conditions

hayātin karīmatin wa naṣīfah.
life dignified and clean.

(Appendix B15)

(1) The agreement which has been reached between the two parts of Yemen for resolving their disputes and working out joint investment is an important step for the future of both sides of Yemen. (2) This agreement represents a triumph of good sense over ignorance (3) and attachment over hatred, (4) because the people of Aden and the people of Sanaa are in need of combined work together towards unity. (5) They desperately need the oil revenues (6) to build their country which has suffered so much for so long from poverty and need.

(7) The Arab alliance did not need new bloodletting to be added to the continuing Arab bloodshed, (8) and for this reason, the agreement between the two parts of Yemen has been welcomed with
optimism and joy by all Arab nations, (9) which have similarly suffered and suffer still the pain of separation, conflict, and fratricide.

(10) [It should be emphasized that] Yemen's oil is strength for the Arabs. (11) It is also good for the people of Yemen, (12) and as such it should not be allowed to become a factor for separation and antagonism between people of the same country. (13) On the contrary, the joint investment in the disputed areas should add strength to the unifying spirit which embodies the people of Yemen, (14) who recognize that the division of their country is indeed a national and pan-Arab disaster.

(15) [It should be emphasized that] a united Yemen that is poor is much better than a rich Yemen that is at war with itself, (16) because the blood of Yemenis is worth more than oil, (17) and their dignity is more important than dollars. (18) Imagine how wonderful it would be (19) if the people of Yemen agree on joint investment (20) and employ these benefits for the good of their own people and for establishing national development programs (21) to raise the standards of living (22) and provide the people with the minimum requirements for a dignified life.

(23) For these reasons then, the agreement between the two parts of Yemen has been welcomed with open arms by both the people of Yemen and Arabia, (24) in the hope that this agreement becomes a preface for other agreements between them, (25) which restore unity to the divided country (26) and provide the people with a pure and dignified way of life.

6.1 Manifestation of repetition

An examination of the above editorial text-form shows that repetition occurs at every level (i.e. clause level, paragraph level, and the text level). This repetition actually takes two forms: first, it occurs in the form of Identity and Similarity Chains. Second, it takes the form of repeating the exact lexical item. These two cohesive devices are investigated below:
6.1.1 The identity chain

It has been explained in Section (3.4.1.1) that this linking device has to do with co-referentiality. That is, every member of this chain refers to the same thing, event, attribute or relation. For instance, Adam, he and his form an identity chain if and only if all these words refer to the same entity. This is so since the relationship between these three items is that of co-reference. As Hasan (1985) points out, identity chains can be realized by devices of reference such as the pronominals he, she, it, etc. and demonstratives such as this, that, these, etc. The relation of co-referentiality can also be realized by other devices such as comparatives (i.e. bigger than, taller than, etc.). However, co-referentiality is typically realized by devices of reference. This notion of co-referentiality can be developed further. For example, Hasan points out that items such as I, my, me make an identity chain if and only if each item in the chain refers to the same person. If we take the criterion of 'referring to the same person', then all of these variants of the first person singular pronoun will form but one identity chain. This chain is working within the text as an integrative device that makes the text hang together. There is of course a cumulation or build-up of these chains in the text-form under discussion. For example, within almost each paragraph there is a cumulation of members formation which takes the form of a chain; this kind of formation is shown as follows:
It is obvious from the above diagram that there is a formation of the identity chain. This cohesive relation links all its members within a paragraph together through the process of co-referentiality. Within this relation, each item forms part of a chain. For example, within chain (1), the relation between al-ittifāq and huwa is that of coreferentiality, where huwa is a non-suffixed or independent pronoun that refers back to al-ittifāq. A similar process occurs between the members of (2), (3), (4), and (5) in which each member within a group refers back to the preceding one. Therefore, the cohesive device that holds the constituents of each paragraph together is that of co-referentiality.

6.1.2 Similarity chain

Looking at the text-form from a different angle, it can be seen that there are other interactions of elements that create another type of chain. This chain is the Similarity Chain (SC).
It has been suggested in section (3.4.1.2) that the (SC) has to do with classification or co-extension. In this chain, members are related to each other by either co-classification or co-extension. In the co-classification relation, the things and processes, to which two members refer, belong to a single or identical class, whereas in co-extension, the two items refer to something within the same general field of meaning. Hence, the (SC) can be realized through synonymy, antonymy, hyponymy (including co-hyponomy), meronymy (including co-meronymy). These unifying relations are manifested in our text-form as follows:

As shown above, the nature of this unifying relation is semantic. That is, the two members of any tie are connected together through some kind of semantic affinity in which these
chains are regarded as basic means of cohesion. Also, within these meaning relations, there is a creation and formation of textual unity whose realization takes place through co-referentiality. These chains tend to be localized within the paragraphs so as to tie their main constituents together and attain text-coherence.

Furthermore, the above diagram shows that this (SC) may sometimes be realized through the relation of reiteration. As Hasan (1979, 1985) points out, reiteration involves the occurrence of a particular set of elements more than once; it also indicates the fact that the editorial text-form has a web of meaning relations which contributes to its textual unity.

In the same way, Halliday & Hasan (1976) and Quirk et al (1972) suggest that reiteration is a cohesive characteristic of language involving the repeated use of lexical items, and the use of synonymous items which are also utilized as a means of linking all parts of paragraph or text together. Accordingly, the lexical item al-ittifâq 'the agreement', as shown in the above diagram, forms a synonymous relation with ittifâq 'agreement', whereas this same lexical item forms an antonymous relation with the item furqah 'separation'. This same synonymous relation can be manifested between al-furqah 'separation' and al-tanâhir 'conflict', as the latter shares part of the former's meaning. The relationship between these two items and that of al-nazaf 'bloodshed' is one of potential causality as conflicts and separation can cause bloodshed. A similar interrelation can be explained in terms of the bond between al-ittifâq, 'agreement'
and that of al-farāh 'happiness'.

It follows from this that the identity chain and similarity chain are powerful as integrative devices, and the presence of these devices is extremely significant for the cohesion and coherence of texts. As Hasan (1979, 1984a) argues, chains can be constructed in such a way that the relation between the members is not that of identity of situational meaning; they can be constructed in such a way that the relation between the members is that of similarity of situational meaning. The importance of chain interaction is indicated in the fact that the members of each paragraph cohere because of the formation and the creation of these chains; the interaction of chains and their deep synthesis lie within the grammatical and lexical componential cohesion (Pappas 1985). Chain interaction includes the same structural role configuration; it also maps, as Pappas argues, these roles onto similar classes of items. This coincides with Hasan (Halliday & Hasan 1985) who argue that the interaction of chains is a deep synthesis of componential cohesion at the grammatical and the lexical levels.

6.1.3 Repetition of exact lexical items in editorials

In this section, an attempt will be made to investigate the repetition of lexical items that is embodied within the structure of editorials, and how such repetition contributes to the coherence of the selected text-forms. Lexical repetition is part of Identity Chains; however, in this section, repetition of
lexical items is dealt with more specifically as the repetition of the exact word. At the same time, Identity chains can presumably involve different lexical items, provided there are co-referential, as in my own example: 'Get that dog away from me. 'You know I hate animals'.

It has been suggested above that identity and similarity chains are mainly used as devices for linking parts of the paragraphs together, whereas repeating the exact lexical item contributes not only to the coherence of this form of text, but also to the effectiveness and persuasiveness of such a text-form. It is the objective of this section to argue that the repetition of the exact lexical item contributes to the coherence of the editorial text-form as a whole, whereas identity and similarity chains, as has been demonstrated, contribute to the coherence of paragraphs. This is not to say that identity and similarity chains are not important for the coherence of the editorial, but rather, their contribution tends to be localized within the paragraph. Unlike identity and similarity chains, the repetition of the exact lexical item tends to link not only the members of the paragraph together, but rather the whole text-form as a unified whole. A cursory look at the above editorial text-form indicates the fact that this form of text utilizes all kinds of repetition, but one tends to see certain kinds of repetition more than others. That is, there is a thread of continuity running from the beginning of the text-form to the end. This thread functions through the repetition of the exact lexical items. For example, the lexical item al-yaman 'Yemen' is repeated twelve
times and nineteen times with its variants. The lexical item *al-ittifāq* 'the agreement' is reiterated five times and seven times with its variants, etc. There are other repeated lexical items that have almost the same manifestation.

It follows from this that the kind of repetition which is dominant at the text level is that of the exact lexical item; it is not co-referential repetition nor the repetition of content. Although these two types of repetition are also used, they are typically used in short cohesive chains (see Section 6.1). What is typically employed at the text level and for coherence purposes is the repetition of the exact lexical item. This feature is also specifically assigned to some rhetorical purposes such as emphasis, assertion, persuasion, etc.

Exact lexical repetition occurs at all levels throughout the whole editorial text-form. As has been noted, the lexical item *al-ittifāq* 'the agreement' is repeated five times, and seven times with all its variant forms. Similarly, *al-yaman* 'Yemen' is repeated twelve times and nineteen times with all its variants. The same process occurs with expressions such as *satray* 'two halves', *al-arabiyyah* 'the Arabic', etc. These exact lexical items are reiterated in an attempt to affect and remind the reader of the argument and, in turn, to persuade him of the thematic element of the text-form which is indicated in the fact that the *ittifāq* 'the agreement' between *satray al-yaman* 'two parts of Yemen' means power and strength for the Arabs. Diagram (25) on the following page shows how the above editorial text-form coheres through exact lexical repetition and how the identity and similarity chains are situated in paragraphs and in short cohesive chains.
Diagram (25)
Manifestation of Repetition

[0] ellipted items.
[†] refers back to the previous usage
It can be seen from the diagram that there is a semantic continuity throughout the whole text-form. This continuity is displayed through the use of all kinds of repetition. It is indeed the case that the repetition of these exact lexical items emphasizes and highlights the main subject.

In the light of this demonstration, it should be pointed out that at the text level, the repetition of the exact lexical item plays an important role in the coherence of editorials. At the clause or paragraph level, pronominal co-reference (e.g. identity chains which include cases of reiteration and similarity chains) is the means by which the elements of the clause and paragraph are held together. This does not mean that pronominal co-reference within editorial text-forms does not occur; rather it does occur, but it tends to be localized or to occur between adjacent or nearly adjacent clauses.

6.2 Repetition and persuasion

It was suggested earlier that repetition in all its forms has assertion and emphasis as its two major motivations or effects. Persuasion is different from repetition in the fact that persuasion is a psychological concept. Persuasion describes the process of interpersonal action and imply direction of influence. This feature can be manipulated in many different ways. For example, the persuasive function of repetition is not only to emphasize, assert and remind the text-reader of the main arguments, but also to make these repeated items have a musical effect particularly when they are joined with parallel
constructions. This in fact enhances the effect upon the text-reader by tuning him into such structure and in turn making him adhere to the text-producer’s viewpoint.

Furthermore, repetition, as has been demonstrated, is not limited to the paragraph, but it rather permeates the whole editorial text-form. It is exact lexical repetition that frequently joins one paragraph with another, thus establishing the overall cohesion of a text. Here is an example from our examined editorial text-forms:

Paragraph (1)

تَواتِرَةَ الْأنباءُ مُعَاكْرَانَ َْلَأَنْ َمَّالِرِدِّيَنَّ
came the-news lately about project American

( There have been intermittent reports recently about the preliminary stages of an American project....)

Paragraph (2)

وَاءِحَامْمُ َْالْأَنْسَرِعُ َْالْمَالِرِدِّيَنَّ
and most-important elements the-project

( The most important elements of this project....)

Paragraph (3)

وَاءِبَغْدَدِيَ الْأَنْسَرِعِ َْتَبَيِّنَتِيَ َْالْمَالِرِدِّيَنَّ
and regardless the-sight about nature the-project

( Regardless of the nature of this project....)

Paragraph (4)

أَمْمَأ َْالْفَهْوَةُ َْالْمَالِرِدِّيَنَّ
but about purpose the-project

( However, as far as the main objectives of this project....)

(Appendix B5)
It should be pointed out here that the above editorial text-form is made up of six paragraphs. In four of these paragraphs, the lexical item al-marüc 'the project', or al-marüc, accompanied by a modifying noun, initiates the paragraph. This is in addition to the abundant repetition of other lexical items such as wazīr al-kārijiyah al-amrīkiy Baker, the American Foreign Minister Baker; isrā'īl, Israel; al-amrīkiy 'American', etc.

To this effect, lexical items tend to be repeated in Arabic at different stages. As Koch (1983) argues, in Arabic, linguistic cohesion relies heavily on repetition. This not only holds the elements of the text-form together but bring out their rhetorical effectiveness.

6.3 Parallelism

It is axiomatic that parallelism occurs in Arabic as well as English. This has been observed in all text-types in general and editorials or argumentative text-types in particular. The form that parallelism in English takes is exemplified in the following example:

For quartering large bodies of troops...For protecting them...For cutting off our trade... For imposing taxes...For depriving us...For transporting us...For abolishing the free system...

De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981: 57)

As De Beaugrande & Dressler argue, there is some kind of relatedness among these actions (all abuses of power)
which is emphasized by the parallelism of form.

While this study does not attempt to make a comparative study of parallelism between Arabic and English, the above example is given to demonstrate how the notion of parallelism in English is treated. Parallelism involves the employment of certain syntactic and semantic arrangements more than once. It involves the creation of new items which, according to Koch, highlight the rhetorical effect of parallelism. Koch says:

"Textually, parallelism adds new items to the same class; rhetorically, it creates new broader classes."

Koch (1983: 178)

6.3.1 The nature of parallelism

It has been suggested in Chapter (3) that parallelism can be a rhetorical device; it can also be a text-building device. However, these two functions of parallelism cannot be totally separated from one another. Koch (1982, 1983) goes on to say that when the paradigmatic class of items gets larger, the rhetorical effect gets more forceful. Each parallel construction joins with another creating another form with more echo than with the one before. This is what keeps the text-reader to a definite point of view. This function of parallelism is extremely important in editorials as these text-forms aim at persuading the text-listener and winning him to the text-producer's side.
Parallelism can be divided into two types: complete parallelism, where there is total or almost total syntactic and semantic configuration, and cumulative parallelism in which the syntactic and semantic structures are less similar and have a different kind of force (Koch 1982). Complete parallelism is a total correspondence between linguistic forms. Cumulative parallelism, on the other hand, is manifested where there is a partial correspondence between linguistic forms. This kind of parallelism is a mixture of lexical cohesion and syntactic cohesion.

In order to see the way parallelism is structured in our examined editorials, let us consider the following text-form:

1. yabdū
   it seems

2. anna baḍa al-muṣṭagilīna bi al-siyyāṣah
   that some the-practitioners in the-politics
   fi al-ṣarqi al-awsat qad ihtaraḥū
   in the-east the-middle qad mastered
   ikṭiyāra al-mawqīṣi al-ḥaṭḥa wa
   choice the-place the-wrong and
   al-wasīlati al-ḥaṭṭi'ah
   the-means the-wrong

3. li yūmārisū hawīyyāṭiḥīm al-niḍāliyyāh.
   to practice identities-their the-struggle.

4. wa yabdū
   and it seems

5. anna uslūba ḫaṭṭī al-ṭā'irātī qad
   that method hijacking the-aeroplanes has
asbaha al-aktara rawajan wa al-aktara
become the-most circulation and the-most
qubulan ladaha halulah,
acceptable to those,

6. fa al-amru yashabuhu qadarun
because the-matter accompany quantity
mahdudun min aslihati al-tahdid
limited from weapons the-threat

7. wa qadarun kabirun min aslihati
and quantity larger from weapons
al-dinayati wa al-ilm.
the-publicity and the-information.

8. wa hinaya yusbiyu al-iktiyaru sahata al-kuwayt,
and when becomes the-choice arena the-Kuwait,

9. wa hinaya takunu al-adatu ta'iratan fi
and when is the-instrument aeroplane in
al-jaw tanqulu al-abriyaa al-cuzzal..
the-air transports the-innocents the-unarmed..
al-atfala wa al-nisa'..
the-children and the-women..

10. wa hinaya yakunu daliha huwa al-iktiyar
and when is that is the-choice

11. fa inna al-su'ala al-tabicy:
then truly the-question the-natural:

12. ma danbu alladina hakamat calayhum
what fault those destined on-them
al-aqduro wa saqathum al-sudfatu li
the-fates and driven the-coincidence to
ta'iratin sayyi'ati al-haz?
aeroplane bad the-luck?

13. wa bi sharfi al-naqari can al-dahayaa
and in dissuade the-sight about the-victims
al-abriyaa',
the-innocent,
14. fa inna al-su'āla al-aham
   fa truly the-question the-important

   alladī yanbagī an naṭrāḥahu ʿalā huwāti
   which should to we ask on amateurs

   al-nilāli al-ṣā'ir:
   the-strife the-flying:

15. mā hiya fā'idatu dālik?
   what is use this?

16. wa mā hiya al-sawābiq allātī kāna
   and what is the-precedings which were

   fīhā al-irhābu wasīlātan li tagyīrin
   in-it the-terrorism a means to change

   siyāsiy aw ʿamalīn tawriyin kābir?
   political or action revolutionary great?

17. inna talaqāti al-raṣāqi allātī tantaqīqu
    emph. bullets the-copper which are shot off

    bi al-ẓalām, wa al-ṣā'irātī allātī tuktatafū
    in the-dark, and the-aeroplane which hijacked

    fi al-samā', wa al-qanābiya allātī tudassu
    in the-sky, and the-bombs which slip

    fi al-munša'at
    in the-establishment

18. taṣṭāṭi'ū ann taṣnaqī na ḍawīyaan
    could to make a sound

    wa iḥtisāman
    and attention

18. wa taṣṭāṭi'ū ann taṣnaqī na ḍawīyaan
    and create the-tens from the-stories

    al-muhzinātī wa al-musalliyātī wa
    the-sad and the-entertaining and

    al-muṭirāh...
    the-exciting...

277
20. wa lākin.. hal yaṣnā’u dālika šay’an
and but.. would create this anything
haqiqiyyan fi qadiyyati tahrīr aw
real in issue liberation or
qadiyyati tagyīr?
issue change?

21. tilka hiya al-qadiyyah,
this is the-issue,

22. wa idā ta’akkadat al-abnā’ allatī taqūl
and if make sure the-news which says
anna maṭāliba al-muktātifīna hiya al-ifrāju
that demands the-hijackers are the-release

amman udīnū fi qadāyā al-tafjīrātī
of whom sentenced in issues the-explosions
bi al-kuwayt
in the-Kuwait

23. fa inna suʿālan ākara yudāf:
then truly question another be added:

24. hal yumkinu an yakūna al-tahdīdu
would possible to is the-threatening
wa al-ibtizāzu wasīlatan li al-raddi
and the-exploitation a means to the-react

alā hakmin qadā’iyyīn cādīl?..
on ruling executive just?..

25. wa hal fāta man udīnū ayyu
and would passed whoever sentenced any
furṣātin
chance

26. li al-difā’i wa taqīmī
to the-defence and present
mā yaṣṣā’ūna min dufūc?
whatever want-they from defence?
27. al- as’ilatu katīratun wa kulluhā taqūl: the-questions a lot and all-they say:

28. al- iktiyāru al-kaṭa’ li wasīlatin kāṭi’ah.. the-choice the-wrong to a means wrong..
fi mawqī’in kāṭi’. in place wrong.

(Appendix B16)

(1) It seems obvious (2) that there are some politicians in the Middle East who have mastered the art of choosing the wrong means in the wrong place (3) in order to identify themselves with the struggle.

(4) It also seems obvious (5) that hijacking aeroplanes has become an acceptable method for those people, (6) since it involves little by way of weapons (7) but much in the way of publicity and recognition.

(8) When they choose Kuwait as their platform (9) and (when they) choose an aeroplane carrying innocent civilians—including women and children—as their target, (10) when this becomes their decision, (11) then, the natural question is: (12) what crime are those people, who just happen to be unlucky enough to be on that plane, guilty of?

(13) Putting aside the innocent victims, (14) a more important question to be asked of those 'hijacking cadets' is: (15) what good could possibly come out of it? (16) What great revolutionary political change has ever been brought about by terrorism?

(17) [It should be emphasized that] night time shooting, hijackings, bombing property (18) may get a reaction (19) and be the stuff of many sad, thrilling, and exciting stories. (20) But, could it have any effect in furthering the cause of liberation?

(21) This is the real issue, (22) and if the news reports confirm that the hijackers demands are for the release of those sentenced for bombings in Kuwait, (23) then the other question that needs answering is: (24) should threats and bombings be used as a way of reacting to a just judicial system? (25) Also, is it too late for those sentenced (26) to have an opportunity of putting their cases and defending themselves by submitting whatever they want?

(27) There are many questions to be answered, but each one gives the same response: (28) this is the wrong choice with the wrong means in the wrong place.
The above text-form, which is somewhat lengthy, is divided into three parts. In the first part, clauses (1) and (4) have the same semantic and grammatical status. These clauses form a parallel frame through the modal clause yabdū 'it seems'. In the second part of this form of text, clauses (2) and (5) have also a parallel construction in which each clause starts with particle + NP + .... In the third part, clauses (8), (9) and (10) follow each other in parallel through the temporal particle hīna 'when', followed by the predicates yusbih 'becomes', takūn 'is' and yakūn 'is' respectively. These are followed by N. All these occurrences indicate the fact that complete parallelism does have its own manifestation in our text-forms. Also, there is cumulative parallelism manifested in this same editorial. For example, clauses (1), (2) (4), and (5) represent cumulative parallelism where these clauses have no total syntactic and semantic configuration, but are fairly similar syntactically and semantically to one another. The remaining clauses do in fact represent in one way or another some sort of cumulative parallelism. Complete parallelism is represented here through clauses (8), (9), and (10), in which the semantic and syntactic units are the same. Each clause consists of the adverb hīna, takūn 'subject-predicate' and complement.....

There are of course other examples in our examined text-forms, which show that editorials have the potential for establishing parallelism, and the significance that Arabic editorials tend to place on parallel constructions is indicated in the fact that these text-forms are persuasive. Moreover,
editorials focus on different kinds of information, representing different kinds of realities which, among other things, take the expression of different events to be the focal point. Thus, the consistency in expressing the tense or expressing the form of a particular clause on more than one occasion is considered to be a cohesive and persuasive device. As De Beaugrande (1980) argues, diversity in using lexical forms can be ascribed to cultural and social factors. That is, some cultures express the meaning of a particular form in few lexical items; others tend to use more forms for the expression.

It was suggested in Chapter 3 that Arabic tends to make the argument present either by repetition of content or repetition of form. As a result, parallel constructions are employed for persuasive purposes. The editorial text-form that follows attempts to shed more light on this point.

32. fa bidūni al-intifādah mā kāna li hādā
   fa without the-uprising not was to this
   al-i'clānī an yatīm,
   the-declaration to complete,

33. wa bidūni al-intifādah mā kāna li hādā
   and without the-uprising not was to this
   al-intiṣārī an yahdūt
   the-victory an happen

34. wa bidūni al-intifādah mā kāna li hādīhi
   and without the-uprising not was to this
   al-farḥāti al-ṣaḡīrātī an taksīr tawqā al-adāb....
   the-joy the-small to break chain the-suffering

(Appendix B17)
..(32) because, without the uprising, the declaration of this Palestinian State could not have made. (33) Without the uprising, this victory could not have happened, (3) and without the uprising, this joy and happiness could not have broken the chain of suffering...

It can be seen that these clauses run in parallel to one another. This parallelism is achieved through the repetition of the coordinating conjunction wa 'and', and through the formal repetition of bi dūn al-intifādah mā kāna li hādâ .... Parallelism, which is achieved through the use of the coordinating conjunctions wa or fa, will be avoided in this study, as these lie within the domain of the clause. Therefore, the investigation of parallelism through the coordinating conjunctions wa or fa is not relevant for showing the true function as well as the nature of parallelism beyond the clause level. While these coordinating conjunctions are important in showing this textual aspect, the concentration here will be on the reoccurrences of formally and grammatically parallel structures.

As shown above, the text-form makes the occurrence of parallelism clear at every clause. There are three parallel constructions in three clauses. The repeated sequences, forms, and devices are employed by the text-producer in order to emphasize or assert the importance of the al-intifādah 'the uprising', and indicate that bidūn al-intifādah 'without the uprising', the ḫaṣīṣ 'declaration', intisār 'victory', and farhah 'joy', would have never been achieved. In order to persuade the reader of the importance of the uprising, many parallel frames
are used within these clauses. For example, the above extract
represents a listing parallelism which indicates that new items
have textually and rhetorically equal values (Koch 1982). The
phrase bidūn al-intifādah, 'without the uprising', is repeated in
all clauses, and this phrase requires the same level of
generality in all its occurrences. To achieve such generality,
the phrase has to be utilized in parallel.

Accordingly, parallelism is a device for organizing a text.
Such organization is manifested in our actual editorial text-
form. For example, in clause (32) the word īqlān 'declaration'
has been used. In clause (33), a new word, which is
grammatically parallel to the previous one, has also been used.
In clause (34), another new item, (i.e. al-intisār), has been
introduced, which is also grammatically parallel with the
previous two forms. These new items tend to reflect the content
of the whole text-form by introducing a new semantic class of
items. This in fact enhances the connectivity and effectiveness
of the editorial. All these uses of parallelism indicate the
fact that editorials have the potential to accommodate easily
this contextual phenomenon and even with a much larger number of
semantic and syntactic constructions. The table that follows
shows the frequency of parallelism among the constituents of our
examined editorial text-forms at two levels: at the clause level
and at the paragraph level. It also indicates that the use of
parallelism is related to the text-producer's evaluation and his
intention to produce a particular effect on the text-receiver by
using recurrent and rhythmic parallel constructions.
Levels of Frequency

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>constituent</th>
<th>clause</th>
<th>paragraph</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>situation &amp; thesis</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evaluation</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exhortative conclusion</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Table (4)
Frequency of parallelism at the clause and paragraph levels

The above table shows that grammatical and formal parallelism are utilized throughout our editorials. However, one tends to see that this cohesive and structuring device is localized within the constituent 'evaluation'. It can also be found in the 'exhortative conclusion', but one may wonder why the constituent 'exhortative conclusion' does not employ this cohesive device as much as the constituent 'evaluation'. The explanation is that the constituent 'exhortative conclusion' tends to compensate for its non-use of repetition through the use of emphatic particles such as inna, which, by their very nature, serve to emphasize or enforce the argument. It should be noted here that the notion of repetition and the particle inna may give different types of emphasis. The particle inna emphasizes the
whole argument whereas the repetition of a lexical item impresses
the item itself in the text-receiver’s mind. Parallelism, within
the constituent ’evaluation’, is more dominant at the clause
level than at the paragraph level. The significance of
parallelism at both levels, clause and paragraph, is investigated
below.

6.3.2 The significance of parallelism

Central to the analysis in this chapter is the question of
the function parallelism plays in the persuasiveness and
effectiveness of editorials. To suggest that it is only a text
building device as well as a rhetorical device is not a complete
solution to this question. The question one needs to ask is: do
parallel constructions have a persuasive function? and how can
this function be manipulated for translation purposes? To
provide an answer to this question, it is important to look at
this phenomenon from a psycholinguistic and socio-linguistic
aspect, and consider the effect which parallelism has on the mind
of the text-reader as well as on his social attitudes. All this
indicates that parallelism, through its cohesive function,
implements its recurrent forms and tends to keep the text-reader
to a definite point of view (Koch 1983).

Al-Jubouri (1983) goes along with Kaplan (1966) in
suggesting that Arabic, as one of the Semitic languages, has a
tendency to develop the paragraph on the basis of a complex
argues that parallel constructions tend to create a forceful effect, through the use of syndeton (i.e. where clauses are connected together with a connective such as wa 'and'). Also, through the use of this text-building device, the text-producer transmits information from his mind to that of the text-receiver in such a way that the intensification of parallel recurrences aims at creating new material with equal importance and equal forcefulness. By doing so, the text-producer seeks to arouse in the addressee emotions of support for the statement made. In other words, in repeating a word or a syntactic construction, the text-producer creates a marked and rhythmic effect, and arouses and reinforces emotions among readers as well as listeners.

From a cohesive perspective, parallelism creates textual unity which is essential for the coherence of texts. As Halliday & Hasan (1976) point out, parallelism is extremely important in creating textual semantic unity. Similarly, De Beaugrande (1980) explains that parallelism, from a grammatical point of view, is a means of affecting the text-reader. He says:

"The effectiveness of grammatical parallelism lies in freeing attention away from parsing surface structures, so that conceptual-relational content can receive greater concentration."

De Beaugrande (1980: 127)

To reflect on the differences between Koch's idea of parallelism and that of De Beaugrande, it is worthwhile noting that Koch sees parallelism as a rhetorical device within the rhetoric or conventions of Arabic, whereas De Beaugrande
considers it as a device which has a universal psychological effect. Both views are valid, because Koch looks at the conventional element of Parallelism, whereas De Beaugrande considers the general effect of it regardless of language related conventions.

Moreover, De Beaugrande argues that through parallel constructions, a text-producer aims at strengthening the content of text, and this kind of strengthening is more forceful whenever he moves from one parallel form into another. This is also evident in Koch (1982, 1983) where parallelism is described as a means of cohesion. Koch suggests that Arabic discourse derives much cohesion from repeated syntactic and semantic forms. Also, the fact that Arabic utilizes parallelism and repetition has been acknowledged by other linguists such as Williams (1982, 1989); and Al-Jubouri (1983).

The most descriptive and analytic study on Arabic parallelism has been carried out by Koch (1982). While other studies have touched upon parallelism in Arabic, they did not really look at it as a text-structuring device. In an attempt to study persuasion in Arabic argumentative discourse, Koch suggests that there are two types of constraint on Arabic discourse: syntactic and rhetorical. These two constraints correspond with grammar and culture; the syntactic necessity is imposed by grammar whereas the rhetorical necessity is imposed by culture. These characteristics tend to place the nature as well as the significance of both repetition and parallelism, not only within editorials, but within the whole argumentative discourse.
7.0 Introduction

I have suggested in Chapter (2) that the best way of dealing with a text is through the identification of its main constituents. Hasan (1984a), Halliday (1977), and Jacobsen (1957) argue, the best way of handling a text, specially from a translation perspective, is through analyzing it into its main components. Jacobsen argues that dealing with a text requires understanding it by means of various tools of analysis, from a simple art of learning the letters to a more complex art of evaluating the larger aspects of the author's skills.

Having investigated the relations between the constituents of editorials (see Chapter 5, and also Appendix A) and analyzed the cohesive devices and signalling expressions that are essential for the connectivity of this kind of discourse, we are now in a position to tackle certain strands (i.e. texture, structure, etc.) within this type of discourse. That is, taking into account the semantic structure of editorials and their main building blocks or constituents, and how they are coherently and cohesively linked together, we can actually identify the characteristics inherent in this form of argumentation and show how these characteristics (e.g. preservation or deletion of lexical items, vagueness of thought, rhetorical function of certain structures, paragraphing, etc.), hinder the translator
from understanding such a discourse. All these, if not accounted for in translation, could violate the expectations of the English native speaker. The most workable approach to translating editorials is, as was suggested in Chapter (2), a pragma-semio-textual approach. This approach is investigated below:

7.1 Pragma-semio-textual approach to translating editorials

It was suggested in Chapter (2) that, for translation purposes, one should look at Arabic editorials in the light of the following factors:

1. Pragmatics: the purposes for which editorials are used; the intention of the text-producer and the action they perform on the environment.

2. Semiotics: that which presents the text-form as a sign; it is the interaction of various elements of text-form as signs. Above all, it is the interaction between the text-producer of these signs and the implicated reader or text-receiver. This involves the social, cultural, and psychological backgrounds of the text-producer.

3. Contextual variables: the relation of the text-form to its environment. This includes the time and the place in which the text-form is produced and received.
It is worth mentioning here that a consideration of the pragmatic dimension under which the text-form is produced is essential. This also involves the semiotic dimension in which the text-form is represented as sign, a sign of a pro-argument, rebuttal or counter-argumentation. The interaction of one sign with another yields a particular kind of communicative effect, indicating the time, place, function of the text-form as implemented by the text-producer. These contextual domains do not exclude the linguistic and the socio-cultural components; rather they give them practical significance.

It has been suggested earlier that one of the important purposes of this chapter is to investigate the translation difficulties that result from the semantic and structural ambiguities of Arabic argumentative editorials. These ambiguities stem from the fact that most of our misunderstanding of other people and their misunderstanding of us are not due to any inability to understand each other's sentences or words. Rather, they stem from one's inability to understand the speaker's intentions in his socio-cultural habitat. This gives rise to the fact that cross-cultural miscommunications are originally observations that arise from cross cultural communication (Koch 1980). This kind of miscommunication is the source of what goes wrong when two people, from two different cultures with very different norms of communication behaviour and two different cultural and rhetorical styles of presenting information, attempt to communicate. The result is of course a lack of understanding that makes one speaker say 'I don't know
what he was talking about or I do not think that he knew what I was talking about'. This breakdown of communication results from speakers' misunderstanding the intention of one another. Of course, the speaker's intentions involve the semiotic - cultural and social- and the contextual situations in which the stretch of language is used, and these are what gives cross cultural communication its success or failure.

Before giving any suggestions as to how to modify or reinterpret the structure of Arabic editorials so as to suit the expectations of the English reader, an attempt will be made here to examine allegations that the structure of the Arabic language is vague. These issues will be highlighted and some of these allegations will be examined. One of these allegations is made by Shouby (1952), who says that there is a general vagueness of Arabic thought, and such vagueness is due to the Arabic language itself. Shouby states:

"Any Westerner who has attempted to comprehend Arabic will agree that thoughts expressed in that language are generally vague and hard to pin down".

Shouby (1952: 291-292)

Shouby goes on to say that the ambiguity of thought in Arabic is due to the fact that Modern Literary Arabic (MLA) is constituted of diffuse, undifferentiated and rigid units of structures. Against Shouby's view, Al-khafājiy (1982: 49) and Ya’qoob (1982) argue that Arabic has many advantages over other languages; these advantages include its ability to accommodate
other languages owing to the openness of its linguistic system. Al-khafajiy ascribes this to some linguistic factors; Arabic has a rich vocabulary system and it can easily accommodate other languages, as the linguistic system is wide enough to uncover all different types of meaning. Many other languages, on the other hand, have a relatively limited system and cannot therefore accommodate the Arabic language. This is why Arabic, according to Al-khafajiy, loses its comprehensibility and effectiveness when transferred into other languages, whereas other languages gain more effectiveness when transferred into Arabic. Along these same lines, Justice (1987) argues that the lexical system in Arabic is very rich; he suggests that lexical items like دِرَأ "arm" may cause ambiguity and confusion when learned by the English speaker, as this lexical item has a large number of synonyms and near synonyms such as سَأَدٌ, قُدُدٌ, زَينٌ, يَدٌ, etc. It is this lexical richness that gives the Arabic language the freedom to accommodate other languages, and at the same time creates some kind of vagueness for the English reader. Justice gives many different examples which demonstrate this point.

Although Justice suggests that there is a richness of vocabulary in Arabic, this does not qualify one to claim that Arabic is better than English, or English is better than Arabic. What should really be pointed out is that all languages have their own connotative, denotative, and expressive systems, and the way each language utilizes its own system varies. This makes
languages different from one another, not better than one another.

It is true that the vagueness of thought Shouby is talking about cannot be explained with complete assurance, nor can it be explained through a linguistic study. It is also true that what Al-Khafajiy suggests about the Arabic language seems to be right from his own perspective. However, when it comes to evaluation, one has to compare one language with another; unfortunately, neither Shouby nor Al-khafajiy does so. As Shamaa (1978) argues, the best possible explanation is that all language communities see their own language as the one that suits them best; they can communicate with it, they express their feelings in it, they exchange views through it, and they think in it. For all these reasons, a native speaker of a language finds his own language the clearest, the most expressive, and the most efficient language.

Of course there is a distinction between a language which is inherently vague, and that which is just typically used vaguely. We believe that no language is really inherently vague, although languages with large vocabularies are likely to encode lexically a large number of subtle semantic distinctions than languages with smaller vocabularies. In languages with larger vocabularies, it is thus likely to be easier to be precise without using many words. To this degree, these languages may be said to be less vague unless their speakers/writers are not always fully competent in them.

Furthermore, in discussing the ambiguity of a language, one has to relate one language to another; this raises the issue of
evaluation. What is meant by evaluation here is that a native speaker of a particular language is in no position to determine whether his/her own language is better than others, as one can naturally claim that every native speaker grows up with his language, expresses his emotions, exchanges his views, and is conditioned to find his language the only language that is completely efficient, comprehensible, and available. It is then natural that he will claim that his language is clearer and better than others. This applies to Arabic as well as to English. Those who claim that Arabic is better than English or English is better than Arabic, without having any linguistic evidence, are not really qualified to make such an assumption, because each language has its own cultural, social, and rhetorical system through which its speakers can easily and efficiently communicate.

To this effect, Shouby and Al-Khafājīy's claims are invalid and their assessment of Arabic is not really a linguistic judgement; it is rather based on their own intuitive characterization. What should really be stated is that any lack of understanding of the social, cultural and rhetorical values of a given structure results in ambiguity in the target language text. Translators should be the judge of this. This type of vagueness is found in all types of translations. The fact is that the source text is translated into the target text; this will definitely yield SOME kind of ambiguity, unless the pragmatic, semiotic-social and cultural and rhetorical values have been carefully considered. The vagueness of the translated
text may stem from the direct transference of concepts that are not familiar to the native speaker of English. If this phenomenon is repeated several times in a single text, the English reader may fail to understand the overall text properly. This is the case in editorials as well as in other text-forms.

It follows from all this that the study of any editorial text-form has to be carried out in conjunction with the study of its pragmatic, semiotic, and linguistic environments. These are essential components that indicate the function of the text. That is, what is the purpose of the text? What does it seek to achieve?

It has been suggested that the main function of editorial text-forms is to persuade. However, to achieve this function, the translator not only has to rely on the linguistic aspects of the text-form, but should also have an awareness of the fact that in terms of purpose (i.e. pragmatic meaning) and function (i.e. semantic meaning), the source and the target text-forms should have almost a similar effect on the reader. These aspects are actually an accumulation of the effect of meaning, grammar, rhetoric (along with the social, stylistic and cultural values), and pragmatics (the text-producer's intentions).

In order to arrive at the same function and purpose as the (ST), there has to be an interaction between the text-form and the reader; this is inevitable because of the fact that all aspects of meaning can be derived from such interaction. Also, in translating Arabic editorials, the translator has to account for the following:
1. Rendition

2. Theme-rheme structure

3. Paragraphing

4. Rhetorical style of argumentation

These categories will be investigated in the following subsections:

7.1.1 Rendition

Rendition is an important aspect of translation. That is to say, the translator has to read the editorial carefully in order to understand it, then read it again to see what kind of modification is needed. Callow (1974) argues that 50% of the process of translation is reading and understanding the source text. This entails understanding the constraints under which the text is produced. As a result, the translator may feel that certain lexical items need to be added; others need to be deleted. These two processes can proceed as long as the meaning of the original text is preserved. Jakobson (1959) and Mason (1982) suggest that in any process of translation, there is always a loss or gain of information, and the degree of loss or gain can really be determined by the context of the text. Here the notion of 'gain' is represented by addition of lexical items, and the notion of 'loss' is represented by their deletion. There are some circumstances where the translator should adhere to the lexis of the text. This notion will be called 'preservation'. To this effect, the notion of 'rendition' can be classified into the following:
1. The preservation of lexical items
2. The addition/deletion and replacement of lexical items

It can be seen at a glance that the above categories seem to contradict one another. However, the following sections elucidate the constraints and circumstances under which each category is applied:

7.1.1.1 The preservation of lexical items

When it comes to translation, the general feeling is that maintaining lexical items decreases the effectiveness of the text. However, maintaining certain lexical items in translation is an important feature, and should be left to the discretion of the translator as well as the reader. If the original text contains certain lexical items that are indispensable for the informativity of the text, the translator must reproduce these lexical items or their equivalents. This is the case with most parallel constructions. These items may need to be kept sometimes in the translated text because of their contribution to the coherence, cohesion and emphatic function of the text. Surely, some parallel constructions in Arabic need to be changed into non-parallel constructions in English, and this depends very much on the discretion of the talented translator.

It should be pointed out that, in English, repetition is not favoured in all types of texts. Arabic, however, particularly editorials, maintains such phenomena for the purpose of coherence.
and cohesion (see Section 6.1.3). The following example*, which
is translated literally, examines this point:

(3) **anna al-mufawadāt bayna al-baladayni**

truly the-negotiations between the-two countries

lan takūna yasīrah

will not be easy

(4) **wa lan takūna al-ṭuruqu mumahhadatan amāmahā**

and will not be the-roads easy before-it

wa amām al-amīni al-cām li al-umami

and before the-Secretary the-General to the-Nations

al-muttaḥidah

the-United

(5) **bal rubbama takūnu al-mufawadātu fi baḍdi**

indeed perhaps be the-negotiations in some

marāḥiliḥa šāʾikatan wa muṣaqadah

stages-its complicated and complex

(Appendix B18)

(3) [It should be emphasized that] these negotiations, between the two countries, will not be easy, (4) and the roads ahead will not be prepared for them and for the Secretary General of the U.N. (5) Indeed the negotiations will perhaps be complicated and convoluted at times...

As the editorial text-form shows, there is a repetition and misunderstanding of certain lexical items, and the translator must decide when to reproduce this kind of repetition and how to

---

* The examples used throughout this chapter are translated literally (i.e. word for word translation). This has been done to show the manifestations of certain lexical items in Arabic or their recurrence in editorial text-forms.
avoid this misunderstanding. For example, the lexical item
*al-mufāwadāt* 'negotiations' has been reiterated for purposes of
cohesion and emphasis. If the translator attempts to delete or
change the construction of these clauses, he can produce
ambiguity and vague meaning. In other words, by deleting the
repeated lexical item *al-mufāwadāt*, the editorial text-form may
be rewritten as follows:

(3) [It should be emphasized that] the negotiations, between
the two countries, will not be easy, (4) and the roads ahead
will not be prepared for them and for the Secretary General of
the U.N. (5) Indeed they will perhaps be complicated and
convoluted at times...

Notice here that the modified text-form is ambiguous since
'they' in (5) could reasonably be taken as being co-referential
with either 'negotiations' or 'roads'. This ambiguity stems from
the deletion of the lexical item *al-mufāwadāt*, 'negotiations'.
The translator has to make sure that although this item is
repeated before, it should be reused for reasons of clarity and
informativity.

Also, the above extract shows that repetition is motivated;
it is used for the purpose of emphasis. As Newmark (1981)
argues, a lexical item repeated in a source text must be
correspondingly repeated in the target text, unless the original
text is poorly written. If the translator avoids lexical
repetition in Arabic editorials, there is a chance of lowering
the informativity of the text-form and in turn decreasing its efficiency.

From a different perspective, a translator may mistranslate certain lexical items and this is due to the fact that the translator misinterpret such items. For example, the lexical item bal cannot be translated as 'but', as this is its literal meaning. The best possible translation to this lexical item is 'indeed'. All these tend to highlight the source of difficulty a translator might face.

7.1.1.2 Addition/Deletion and replacement of lexical items

This notion is mainly concerned with the deletion and addition of certain lexical items within the target text. Sometimes, the presence of these lexical item decreases the connectivity and coherence of the translated text; therefore, they should be deleted. At other times, certain lexical items need to be deleted and replaced by other items to clarify a certain ambiguity in the target text. Therefore, the process of deletion/addition and replacement takes two forms: first, complete deletion of lexical items. Second, deleting a lexical item and replacing it with a pro-form. The first one occurs within the domain of the clause as well as beyond the clause level. That is, there are certain lexical items within or beyond
the clause that give the same meaning. Here is an example demonstrating this:

8. \text{li ḍālika qūbila ittifāqu șāṭray al-yaman bi to this met agreement two-parts the-Yemen by} al-tafā'uli \text{wa al-farah min aqṭāri the-optimism and the-joy from regions} al-ṣurūbatī \text{wa min al-ṣuqūb al-ṣarabiyyah the-Arab and from the-nations the-Arab}

(Appendix B15)

(8) For this reason, the agreement between the two parts of Yemen has been welcomed with optimism and joy by all Arab regions and Arab nations.

As the example shows, there are certain lexical items within this clause that need to be deleted, because their presence does not add anything but rather lowers the efficiency of the text-form. For example, the noun phrases Arab regions and Arab nations give more or less the same meaning; therefore, one of them should be deleted by the translator.

There are other cases where a deleted lexical item has to be replaced by a proform, as the presence of the same lexical item is not favoured. The following example shows what I mean:

16. \text{fa damu ãbnā'i al-yaman aglā because blood sons the-Yemen more-expensive} min al- naïf from the-oil
and unity-their and dignity-their more important
from the-dollars.

then imagine how

if agree sons the-Yemen on

the-investment the-joint for goods-their...

...(16) because the blood of the Yemenis is more precious than oil, (17) and their unity and dignity is more important than dollars. (18) Imagine how wonderful it would be (19) if the people of Yemen agreed on joint investment and....

It can be noted that the noun phrase abnã' al-yaman 'the people of Yemen' in clause (19) adds nothing to the target text; it rather confuses the text-reader whether the text-producer means the same noun phrase that has been used in clause (16) or not. This makes the preservation of this noun phrase in the target text misleading and therefore decreases the coherence of the text. To avoid such confusion or ambiguity, the translator can delete this noun phrase and replace it with a proform or a different kind of noun. Here is the translation after the deletion and the replacement of the noun phrase abnã' al-yaman 'the people of Yemen':
...(16) because the blood of the Yemenis is more precious than oil, (17) and their unity and dignity is more important than dollars. (18) Imagine how wonderful it would be (19) if they were to agree on joint investment and ........

There is another translation problem within editorials that has to do with the "ambiguity of pronouns". The text-producer should be very cautious when using pronouns. Even though the use of pronouns is not favoured in Arabic editorials, it is used to attain cohesion in other texts such as narrative, etc. Therefore, a text-producer may produce some sort of ambiguity in his text if he is not making his reference very clear. Such ambiguity stems from his use of long series of pronouns. Hence, there is a preference among editorial writers to use the same lexical item rather than using a pronoun, as by using pronominal reference, the text-producer produces a very confusing series of reference. Here is an example that demonstrates this:

17. fa al-mawridu al-bašariy yakādu yakūnu
as the-resource the-human almost is
ahamma mašādiri al-tanmiyah
the most important resources the-development

18. ida ahsanna istitmārahū fi istiglāli
if do well-us investment-its in exploit
sā'iri al-mawārid al-ṭabī'iyyah
all the-resources the-natural

19. bal wa al-camali al-ibtikāriy ēalā
but and the-work the-innovative on
ijādi mawārida sinā'iyyah mukammilah,
finding resources industrial complementary,

20. wa huwa al-asāsu fi dafī sā'iri al-cawāmil
and it-is the-base in pushing all the-factors

21. .......

22. bal huwa al-cāmilu al-darūriy aydan
but is the-factor the-necessary also
fi al-injāzi al-ma'nawiyy....
in the-achievement the-moral-related

23. lākinnahu yanqalibu bi al-ḍarūrati ilā
but-it turns-it in the-necessity into
Cimjlj ihbatin....
factor disappointment

(Appendix B1)

(17)...because the human resource is almost the most important
reservoir for development, (18) if it were to be invested
properly in exploiting all natural resources of the country, and
(19) also, if it were to be invested in innovative work creating
complementary industrial resources. (20) It is the basis on
which to build (21)... (22) It is an essential factor for moral
achievement... (23) However, it will inevitably turn into a
actor of depression and regression ...

The above example demonstrates that there is an ambiguity
about the use of the pronoun huwa 'it(is)' in clause (20), and
subsequently in clauses (22) and (23). This ambiguity results
from the lack of clarity as to what each one of these pronouns is
corereferential with. Each of the pronouns used in the original
text can be corereferential with two or more noun phrases, and
this will produce uncertainty of meaning within the text-reader’s
mind. Here is the confusing series of references within the above example:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Cadad} & \quad \text{al-sukkān} \\
(4) \quad \text{huwa} & \quad \text{al-mawrid} \\
& \quad \text{al-bašariy} \\
& \quad \text{al-ṣāmal} \\
& \quad \text{al-ibtikāriy}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
(6) \quad \text{huwa} & \\
(7) \quad -\text{hu} &
\end{align*}
\]

Diagram (26)
Demonstration of the source of confusion within a series of references

The above characterization shows that in clause (20), \textit{huwa} can be co-referential with \textit{zivādatu Cadad al-sukkān} 'increase of population', and at the same time, it can also be co-referential with \textit{al-mawrid al-bašariy} 'the human resource' and \textit{al-ṣāmal al-ibtikāriy} 'the innovative work'. In clauses (22) and (23), \textit{huwa} and the connected pronominal suffix -\textit{hu} respectively, the same cycle repeats itself. The ambiguity here is similar to
that of the preceding clause (clause 20). The use of pronouns in Arabic editorials in this particular way can produce confusion and lack of clarity. In view of this, the translator has to decide whether to repeat the same lexical item or to clarify the use of the pronoun and what it refers to. By doing so, the text producer maintains the coherence and the continuity of the editorial. These examples have been utilized to show how the repetition of the same lexical item in editorials serves to keep the text-form organized and coherent and avoids any confusion that it may cause to translators as well as text-readers.

7.1.2. Theme-rheme constructions

This section investigates the most frequent thematic patterns within argumentative editorial text-forms; it also touches upon the importance of these patterns for translation and the cognitive as well as the linguistic implications behind them. Before we go any further and explore the thematic patterns predominant in editorials, an attempt will be made to provide a brief account of the nature of thematic constructions. This aspect will be investigated below:

7.1.2.1 Thematic patterning

In any kind of discourse, thematic patterning or what may sometimes be called the concatenation of theme-rheme (Danes 1970, 1974), is regarded as a means of organizing and structuring
discourse. Thematic patterning yields discourse continuity which arises from the distribution of information over the main elements of discourse (Dijk 1977). Dijk believes that any clause or sentence is capable of manifesting the connection between what is old and what is new.

The notion of theme-rheme has been pursued by both Halliday and the Prague School. According to Halliday (1970b, 1985a), theme is the takeoff point of the clause; it is that which comes first in the clause. Therefore, Halliday assigns a position to Theme and Rheme, the latter follows the former. However, Halliday (1985a) believes that the initialness of 'theme' is simply a fact of English. Therefore, one cannot suppose that 'theme' comes first in all languages. However, Halliday suggests that 'theme' and 'rheme' combine together to constitute a message and 'theme' to him is:

"the element which serves as the point of departure of the message; it is that with which the clause is concerned. The remainder of the message, the part in which the Theme is developed, is called in Prague School terminology the Rheme. As a message structure, therefore, a clause consists of a Theme accompanied by a Rheme; and the structure is expressed by the order-whatever is chosen as Theme is put first".

Halliday (1985a: 38)

Halliday argues that in the grammar of English, theme is not necessarily realized in a nominal group. It may occur in a form of adverbial group or a prepositional phrase. The realization of
these elements in English is illustrated in the following examples:

1. | Once | I was like a turtle |
   Theme | Rheme

2. | Very carefully | she put him back on his feet |
   Theme | Rheme

3. | On Friday | I go backward to bed |
   Theme | Rheme

4. | If the duke gives anything... | it will be the teapot |
   Theme | Rheme

In terms of the functions of Theme and Rheme, thematization gives a structure to the clause. Within the structure of English, a speaker organizes his message as a component of discourse.

Halliday goes on to say that the function of theme can be considered as the diectic element within the clause structure; it defines the speaker's perspective of the content. As far as the association of 'theme-rheme' and 'given-new' is concerned, Halliday suggests that 'theme-rheme' can sometimes be associated
with 'given-new'. The two characteristics however are independent. The difference, Halliday argues, is that while 'given' means 'what you were talking about', 'theme' means 'what I am talking about'. Also, 'given-new' (information) structures the item in such a way as to relate it to the preceding discourse, whereas 'theme-rheme' (thematization) structures the item in such a way that is independent of what has gone before. However, Halliday (1968: 199, 242), suggests that rheme may be recoverable from context; at the same time, he argues that its selection is context independent. This lack of consistency seems to be open for various interpretations. All these subsets give the clause its significance as a component of a text; they can also be considered as a reflection of the textual organization of language.

As for the Prague School, this approach emphasizes the fact that language can be analyzed in terms of functionally related units. This approach has been developed by writers such as Firbas (1966, 1974), Danes (1970, 1974), Svoboda (1974), etc. Its formulation becomes well-known later as Functional Sentence Perspective (FSP). One of the main concerns of this approach is the organization of a particular message into constituents such as 'theme-transition-rheme'.

According to FSP, elements of the clause do not contribute equally to the advancement of discourse (c.f. Danes 1974). That is, some elements are more essential in pushing communication
forward than others; these elements are said to have greater Communicative Dynamism (CD). According to Firbas, the degree of (CD) carried by a linguistic element, is:

"the extent to which the element contributes towards the development of the communication".

Firbas (1974: 19)

Accordingly, basic CD distribution is carried out by a series of elements opening with the element carrying the very lowest and gradually passing onto the element carrying the highest degree of CD. This basic distribution reflects the movement of the mind (ibid: 22).

Thematic elements are those which contribute least to the Communicative Dynamism of the clause/utterance. The rest of the clause/utterance is divided into transition, usually a verb, and the rheme. The rheme is defined as that which contributes most to the communicative dynamism of the clause or the utterance.

A complete analysis of the FSP approach and that of Halliday is beyond the scope of this thesis; however, those who are interested in knowing more about these two approaches may refer to Danes (1974), Palkova & Palek (1978), Williams (1988), Aziz (1988). The following examples are taken from Williams (1988: 79) to demonstrate the organization of the message within the FSP approach:
It should be emphasized here that our analysis will follow the FSP approach, because this approach, as Aziz (1988) argues, is not confined, as that of Halliday (at least in his published exposition, which all deal with English) to the positional identification of the theme. That is, whatever comes first, according to Halliday, is the theme regardless of the importance of the contextual or situational elements, upon which the whole essence of communication is built. Plakova & Palek argue that the selection of theme-rheme in the Hallidayan approach is independent of context (Plakova & Palek 1978: 215). Above all, the FSP approach specifies the communicative importance from the speaker's standpoint and accounts for the fact that communicative dynamism is "a reflection of aspects of context such as intentionality and text-type focus, and not just of basic word-order" (Hatim & Mason 1990: 213).
Williams (1988) argues that Halliday's definition of theme does not really and sufficiently handle cases where there is more than one point of departure (c.f. example 2 above). He argues that "in most texts, the first element functions contrastively, whereas the second element is continuative" (ibid: 79). These types of shortcomings can be avoided by adopting the FSP approach.

It follows from all this that thematic structures and thematic functions contribute to meaning continuity and the organization of discourse (Halliday & Hasan 1976); these structures are used for rhetorical purposes (i.e. assertion, emphasis, etc.). The thematic patterning and their manifestation in argumentative editorial text-forms is illustrated below:

7.1.2.2 Thematization in Arabic editorials

It should be noted at the outset that the complexity of subject-matter (i.e. editorials contain different types of discourse such as expository, narrative, etc.) and the short range of cohesive chains predominant in editorials may give rise to the incongruity within the concatenation of theme-rheme patterns. We believe, therefore, that various thematic patterns can be found in editorials.

It has been demonstrated that editorials can easily accommodate the repetition of lexical items. This entails the repetition of the same theme or reference to previous rheme. The following editorial text-form investigates the thematic patterns of editorials:
(1) akkada al-ra’īs ḥusnī mubārak fi confirmed-he the-president Husni Mubarak in mu’tamari al-duḥāh anna al-ḥāṭara alladī yuhaddidu conference the-Duḥah that the-danger which threatens al-mujtama‘ al-miṣriy ṭulāṭiyu al-taṣā’ub: the-society the-Egyptian threefold the-ramifications:

(2) al-taṭarrufu wa al-muḳaddirātu wa al-infijāru the-fundamentalism and the-drugs and the-explosion al-sukkāniy, (3) wa huwa amrun yuṣkinu ma‘c the-population, and is-it matter could with istifḥāluh an yudi bi mustaqbali al-bilādi bimā becoming-grave-its to lead in future the-country in what yuḍī ilayhi min ʾawāqiba waḳīmah (4) wa hiya ʾala lead to-it from consequences evil and are on al-tartīb: al-ırḥābu wa al-ijrāmu wa the-arrangement: the-terrorism and the-crime and al-ḵarāb, the-destruction.

(5) wa al-waqī‘u anna al-infijāra al-sukkāniy and the-reality that the-explosion the-population yuṣkinu an yakūna muṣaffāra kullā al-maṣākil ʾibra could to be outbreaker all the-problems through silsilatin min rudüdi al-af‘āl kullun min-hā series from reactions the-actions each from-them yahmilu nuḍura al-ḥāṭari fi ḥaddi dātiḥ. (6) fa carries warning the-danger in end self-it. because huwa yu‘addī ma‘c giyābi al-kiṭāti al-taḥassubiyah wa is-it lead with absence the-plans the-expectation and qusūri al-murāqabati wa iftiqārī al-qudrāh ilā short the-supervision and lack the-ability to al-fā‘iḥiyah ilā ma yuṣbihu al-gūla alladī the-effectiveness to what look like the-beast which yaftarīsu kiyāna al-mujtama‘, (7) fa huwa devours entity the-society, as a result is-it
The Egyptian president, Husni Mubarak, affirmed, in the conference of 'Du'ah' that there are three dangers which threaten the Egyptian society. These are fundamentalism, drugs, and explosion of population. These kinds of danger could, if they become grave, lead to drastic results. These are terrorism, crimes, and destruction.

In fact, the population explosion could, through a chain reaction, break up all these problems with each one bearing its own harbinger of danger. Because, with the absence of the expected planning, deficiency of supervision, and lack of effective administration, the population explosion could turn society into a monster ravishing itself; it will also increase unemployment; it will inflame inflation and it will spread out corruption. All these are evils which lead to fundamentalism from two sides: one being the violence of terrorism which stems from laying the blame on society, and the other being the escapism and drug addiction born from alienation and desperation of these within society.

It should be pointed out that the translation of the above editorial text-form is made to allow certain lexical items to be repeated to show their connections with previous clauses. Also,
the translation does not conform with the rank and indentation system used for this analysis, as this system does not help us reveal any real patterns of thematicity. Moreover, the modal clauses have been conjoined with the following clause as these clauses do not contain theme-rheme elements (i.e. *wa al-wāqi, 'in fact'). All these have been done in this particular way to show the thematic patterns more clearly.

As the text-form shows, clause (1), (2), (3) and (4) manifest a 'Simple Linear Thematic Progression' (SLTP) (Danes 1970). This means that each clause repeats the same previous and adjacent rheme, generating a new theme. The pattern of thematicity is represented as follows:

\[
\begin{align*}
T_1 & \quad R_1 \\
T_2 & \quad R_2 \\
T_3 & \quad R_3 \\
T_4 & \quad R_4 \\
\end{align*}
\]

\((T_2 = R_1)\)
\((T_3 = R_2)\)
\((T_4 = R_3)\)

Looking at the remaining clauses of the same text, and starting from clause (6), it can be seen that clauses (6), (7), (8), (9), (10) and (11) repeat the main previous theme of the paragraph (i.e. explosion of population or a co-referential proform). This

\* Since we are following the FSP approach, we can ignore the fact that the modal clause *wa al-wāqi, 'in fact' is a theme in Arabic, and *inna clause is its rheme. This is at least in Hallidayan terms.
pattern, according to Danes (1974), represents the Thematic Progression with Continuous Theme (TPCT). The representation of this thematic pattern within the above text-form is shown as follows:

\[
\begin{align*}
T_6 & \quad \rightarrow R_6 \\
T_7 & \quad \rightarrow R_7 \\
T_8 & \quad \rightarrow R_8 \\
T_9 & \quad \rightarrow R_9 \\
T_{10} & \quad \rightarrow R_{10} \\
T_{11} & \quad \rightarrow R_{11}
\end{align*}
\]

\((T_6 = T_7 = T_8 = T_9 = T_{10} = T_{11})\)

It follows from the preceding analysis that editorials, like other Arabic texts, have a tendency to repeat the same theme in successive sentence or themes derived from previous rhemes. While these two types of thematic patterns are found in Arabic argumentation, one finds thematic progression of themes derived from previous rhemes more predominant. This is manifested in editorials as well as other argumentative written Arabic texts. The justification for finding different thematic progression is also due to the fact that editorials as well as other texts are part of the Arabic written language, and one would expect to find different thematic constructions. As Williams says:

"Written Arabic tends to repeat the theme in successive clauses .... In written Arabic, the theme of a clause tends to have the same referent as the theme or rheme of the previous clause."

Williams (1982: 46)
From a cohesion perspective, thematization enhances the cohesion of the whole editorial text-form by giving meaning continuity to the it; such continuity has unequivocal significance in the overall coherence of the editorials.

7.1.2.3 Thematic constructions in translation

For translation purposes, translators as well as interpreters should be aware of the fact that translating from Arabic, which enjoys a relatively free word-order, into English, which has a word-order that is controlled by rigid grammatical rules involves reordering of thematic patterns. Also, in the repetition of the same themes or previous rhemes, the text producer highlights, to a large extent, the basic objective of his argument; he also identifies the relative importance of his subject-matter in order to persuade the text-receiver.

To this effect, the translator has to be aware of the thematic patterns of each text since each text-type relays these thematic patterns differently. What is important in editorials is the realization that certain thematic or rhematic elements are emphasized for a rhetorical purpose; this kind of emphasis should be matched and conveyed into the target text.

Moreover, in producing a text, certain thematic or rhematic elements are highlighted by the writer, as constructing a text is a unique act by itself in which the writer demonstrates different strategies and different patterns of thought. This not only reflects the process of writing the text, but also the speaker or
the text-producer's intentionality behind emphasizing these rhematic or thematic elements.

Of equal importance is also the fact that theme-rheme structures of the original sentence must be compared with the translated sentences, as changing the order of theme-rheme structures from one language to another yields a change of emphasis.

Furthermore, the translator should pay great attention to the Thematic Progression (TP) of editorials. What is meant by thematic progression is "the concatenation of particular Ts and their connection with the text, its subparts and situation" (Danes 1970: 137). To this effect, the translator should realize that in the thematic pattern (SLTP), as in clauses (1), (2), (3), (4), emphasis has been placed on the rhematic element of each clause which, according to FSP, carries the highest degree of CD. This is what pushes communication forward and puts more evaluation on the rhematic elements. If there is a manifestation of the thematic pattern (TPCT), as in clauses (5), (6), (7), (8), (9), (10), (11), the translator should realize that the emphasis, highlighted by the text-producer, is shifted from rhematic elements into thematic elements. This means that repeating the same previous theme tends to persuade the text-producer of the main argument. Above all, the translator should be aware of the fact that each thematic pattern has a particular rhetorical purpose, arising from the intentionality of the text-producer. Therefore, any failure in realizing the exact rhetorical intent and its function may give rise to a distortion of the textual meaning of the original text.

318
7.1.3. Paragraphing

Paragraphing is also an important graphological device which is used sometimes idiosyncratically in Arabic editorials. It is not used as a division of thought. Duff (1981) argues that a paragraph is more likely to be an independent unit of meaning, because it contains a complete body of thought. Similarly, Brooks & Warren (1952) commenting on the paragraph as a 'convenience to the reader' argue that the paragraph is a division of composition which signals to the reader that the division which is set off constitutes a unit of thought; it also makes the divisions of the writer's thoughts visible. Brooks & Warren go further in saying that this division, for the reader, is a convenience.

On the psychological reality of the paragraph, Koen, Becker, and Young (1969) compare the paragraph with the sentence; they argue that if the importance of grasping the underlying structure of the sentence contributes to its understanding, then, the perception of the paragraph performs a similar function. Also, Kieras (1978) suggests that the role of the paragraph is to minimize memory load: the text-reader does not have to burden his memory by the different kinds of information presented in the text. Kieras goes on to say that the function of the paragraph is to make it easy on the reader to digest the content of the text. Therefore, common sense dictates that lack of paragraphing of this type in Arabic editorials is a genuine problem for the English reader, as this graphological device is sometimes used in
Arabic for stylistic reasons. Here is an example from our actual editorial text-forms that shows what I mean. The text-form will be left as in the original form. The division between paragraphs is indicated in the double (double spacing):

tamaššiyan maṣa'a al-ṣalāqāti al-akawiyyati according with the-relations the-brotherly
bayna ʿammāna wa badād, jā'at ziyyāratu between Amman and Baghdad, came visit
al-ṣamali al-sarīʿatu, allātī qāma biḥā dawlatu the work the-quick, which made in-it excellency

al-raʿīs zayd al-rifiʿiy, ilā al-ṣirāqi the president Zayd Al-Rifāʿiy, to the-Iraq
al-ṣaʿāqiʿī ams, ḥayṭu istaqbala-hu the-brother yesterday, where received-him
siyādatu al-raʿīs saddām ḥusayn wa ḥayṭu mister the-president Saddam Hussein and where
ajrā al-sayyidu al-rifiʿiy maṣ al-sayyid ẗāḥā made the mister Al-Rifāʿiy with the-mister Taha
yāsīn ramaḍān muḥādatātin bannaʾah..... Yaseen Ramadan talks constructive....
(Appendix D12)

The short working visit which Prime Minister Zaid Al-Rifāʿiy paid to Baghdad yesterday was in accord with the strong fraternal relations existing between Jordan and Iraq during which he was received by President Saddam Hussein and held constructive talks with Mr. Taha Yaseen Ramadan.....

As shown above, the layout of the above text-form has been made exactly like the layout of the original (i.e. see Appendix
D12). Also the translation has been made to conform with the original text-form to show how confusing the division of paragraphs in Arabic is. While there are some Arabic newspapers that have the paragraph occasionally as a division of thought, they are still inconsistent in using this device. This causes uncertainty in the text-reader as to when or where one uses this device. The solution to this problem is that the translator has to stick to the paragraph as a division of thought, since this matches the expectations of the English reader.

Whether the above form of text has one or two paragraphs, the main important point here is that a paragraph has to contain a complete unit of meaning. If one considers the above text-form as consisting of one unit of meaning, which I personally do, then, it would be presented as follows:

The short working visit which Prime Minister Zaid Al-Rifa'yi paid to Baghdad yesterday was in accord with the strong fraternal relations existing between Jordan and Iraq during which he was received by President Saddam Hussein and held constructive talks with Mr. Taha Yaseen Ramadan.....

If one considers the text-form as having two units of meaning, then it would be presented as follows:

The short working visit which Prime Minister Zaid Al-Rifa'yi paid to Baghdad yesterday was in accord with the strong fraternal relations existing between Jordan and Iraq during which he was received by President Saddam Hussein.

Mr. Al-Rifa'yi held constructive talks with Mr. Taha Yaseen Ramadan and .....
In order to clarify the significance of paragraphing in translation and the uncertainty it causes to the English reader, here is another text-form which also manifests the same problem discussed earlier:

(13) inna jābira al-aḥmad kāna wādiḥan cindamā
emp. Jabir Al-Ahmad was clear when

akkada ahammiyyata taʻzīzi al-quwāti
affirmed importance strengthen the-forces

al-musallāḥah (14) wa ahammiyyata iṣādat al-nazari
the-armed and importance return the-look

fi ismāniyyāti hādihi al-quwāt al-musallāḥah,
in capabilities these the-forces the-armed,

(15) bi ḥayt takūnu al-dirā' a al-wāqī
in a way be the-armour the-protector

li al-kuwayt
to the-Kuwait

(16) wa al-ta'kīda fi al-waqti nafsīh ṣalā
and the-confirmation in the-time itself on

iltizām al-kuwayt tijāha shāqīatiha al-ṣarabiyyat.
commitment the-Kuwait towards sisters-its the-Arab.

(Appendix D21)

(13) Prince Jabir Al-Ahmad spelled out clearly the importance of strengthening the armed forces, (14) and the importance of reexamining their capabilities (15) so as to be the protecting armour of Kuwait.

(16) And at the same time confirming Kuwait's commitment towards the Arab countries...

It was pointed out earlier that paragraphing should help the reader to perceive that each paragraph expresses a different
theme or sub-theme. These motivated divisions which native speakers of English expect to find in all written texts are significant ones for the reader as well as the writer.

7.1.4 Rhetorical and cultural style of argumentation

Hatim (1989) is the first attempt of its kind to study Arabic argumentative discourse, despite the fact that his analysis naturally does not discuss all affinities and complexities of Arabic discourse. Hatim makes some interesting observations on argumentation although he does not investigate complete Arabic texts. One of the shortcomings of Hatim's study is that he concentrates on making observations on argumentation through translated Arabic texts. Hatim does not attempt to present Arabic texts in order to show how argumentation within both languages can be differentiated. This thesis claims that citing the outcome of Arabic translated texts tends to miss out on the complexities and meaning multiplicities of certain structures of the text-forms under discussion. Although we have some reservations about Hatim's conclusions, in particular the claim that the use of the SVO nominal structure is always evaluative whereas the "VSO verbal structures are used only when the verbal element is semantically empty" (my underlining) (Hatim 1989: 29), his work has some useful insights.

It should be pointed out that one of the main objective of this section is to show how the argumentative strategies of both languages are the product of the rhetorical and cultural styles
of argumentation. This study suggests that acquaintance with these strategies in both languages yields a better understanding and translatability of these text-forms. This aspect of the analysis will be illustrated later.

Before going any further, it should be reiterated that any attempt to produce replicas of Arabic editorials will be doomed to fail to convey the intended meaning of the original. Therefore, the message has to be restructured according to the rhetorical and cultural conventions associated with the target language. Because of the fact that Arabic and English are culturally distant languages, each language has a quite distinctive rhetorical and cultural style of argumentation. This is the view of Sapir (1956); Kaplan (1966, 1983); and Koch (1980, 1982). These scholars hold the position that each language has its own separate structure, and this structure represents a different kind of reality. Sapir states:

"The fact of the matter is that the 'real world' is to a large extent built up on the language habits of the group. No two languages are ever sufficiently similar to be considered as representing the same social reality. The worlds in which different societies live are distinct worlds, not merely the same world with different labels attached."

Sapir (1956: 69)

Similarly, Kaplan (1966, 1983) suggests that the way languages present their structures is different from one another and this is due to the fact that speakers of different languages
use different means and devices to present information. In his contrastive analysis across languages, Kaplan says:

"I am concerned with the notion that speakers of different languages use different devices to present information, to establish the relationship among ideas, to show the centrality of one idea as opposed to another, and to select the most effective means of presentation."

Kaplan (1983: 140-141)

Accordingly, languages differ in terms of their patterns of construction and their rhetorical and linguistic systems. Therefore, the meaning potential and the function of an Arabic editorials, regardless of its relative appreciation, is always constant (i.e. unchanging in its nature), and the stylistic, cultural, and rhetorical value is inevitably constant as well. Also, two translations of the same editorial text-form seldom turn out to be completely identical. Hence, producing replicas of Arabic editorials as well as other texts is a violation in itself of the expectations of the English reader.

Problems of translating Arabic editorials arise from many factors. Central among the factors demonstrated above, is the rhetorical and cultural style of argumentation. Since the generic structure of Arabic editorials has been demonstrated in Chapter 5 (see also Appendix A), no attempt will be made here to incorporate any text-form. However, reference to particular text-forms will be made when necessary. As for the English editorials, an attempt will be made to present an English editorial text-form in the hope that we can show the main constituents of this type of discourse. This text-form will
be presented only for the sake of exposition.

Before we go further and explore the main constituents of English argumentative discourse (i.e. editorial text-forms), it should be emphasized here that this section does not intend to present a general semantic and structural analysis of Arabic and English, but rather attempts to show that Arabic and English adhere to different patterns of construction. These different patterns are a result of the different rhetorical and cultural style of argumentation. Therefore, an English editorial text-form will be presented only to explain this point and demonstrate the main text-form constituents. After that, an attempt will be made to show how the Arabic rhetorical strategy of argumentation is different from that of English. This strategy is a source of misapprehension of the meaning potential of argumentative editorial text-forms.

It has been demonstrated (see Section 5.1.1) that Arabic has two basic forms of argumentation: a pro-argument and a counter-argument. A pro-argument involves a 'thesis', followed by the text-producer's extensive substantiation. Because of the fact that a 'pro-argument' in Arabic is characterized by a similar structure to that of the English (i.e. present a thesis, show agreement, and then substantiate it) and because of the fact that this form of argumentation does not cause the same translational problems as far as misunderstanding the intended meaning, there is no need to go further into this argumentative feature. However, it should be pointed out that Arabic has a tendency to use a similar structure in a pro-argument to English,
whereas in a counter-argument, Arabic tends to use a different structure, and this causes difficulty for English speakers. A counter-argument involves a refutation of a thesis. In English, the text-producer does not present his own thesis first but that of his adversary. In other words, the English counter-argument goes in line with what Coulthard calls the "Strawman argument" (Coulthard 1987). According to Coulthard, the Strawman argument is:

"A false assertion followed by a denial and justification or explanation of the denial

Coulthard (1987: 188)

Coulthard argues that the strawman argument is a strategy used by the text-producer. This strategy has its own implications as far as acknowledging the adversary's main statement. To illustrate what is meant by a strawman argument, Coulthard present the following example:

"(1) Most diabetics think that food will be a problem when travelling. (2) However, food in any country consists of the same basic ingredients. (3) Potatoes, rice, and other starchy vegetables,...are the main source of carbohydrates. (4).... (5).....".

Coulthard (1987: 188)

According to Coulthard, sentence (1) presents the writer's false assertion, followed by sentence (2), a denial. The sentences that follow are used as justification and explanation of that kind of denial. These sentences are utilized by the text
producer to support and validate his denial of the unreliable assertion.

In order to clarify the typical structure of a counter-argument in both English and Arabic, consider the following diagram:

Accordingly, in Arabic, the text-producer, in constructing his argumentative editorial text-form, goes through stages that are different from those of English. These stages are manifestations of the rhetorical and cultural format each language adheres to. Consider the editorial text-form on the following page.

It can be seen from the above editorial that the text-producer starts with his opponent's thesis (i.e. Mr. Hurd's cautious start), leaving his statement to take second place. For an Arabic speaker, this form of text is very problematic, because the Arabic reader may confuse the opponent's thesis with that of the text-producer's. That is, the Arabic speaker may think that the thesis presented first is the text-producer's thesis and not the opponent's. Therefore, this text-form may be thought of by
DOUGLAS HURD's two speeches on Europe in the past two days may well attract less attention in the British Press than his forthcoming visit to Hong Kong. They deserve at least as much. (....)

Speaking in Oxfordshire on Monday, Mr. Hurd committed the British Government to the principle of making "a strenuous and imaginative response to the extraordinary effort which is being made by the people of Eastern Europe". And he was right to emphasize the ways in which many different kinds of individual British people can help. He mentioned bankers, parliamentarians, English teacher, even journalists. (....)

But in terms of political arrangements, Mr. Hurd went no farther in his first speech than to suggest the European nations should be invited to join the Council of Europe. That does not go very far. (....)

Yesterday, to a mixed gathering of members of the US Congress and the European Parliament in London, Mr. Hurd went further. For a start, he put the future of Eastern Europe in the context of the developing European Community. He rightly said that events in the East presented the EC with its greatest opportunity. He even wheeled out the European Free Trade Association, that relic of the timidity of a previous generation of British politicians. (....)

He has not, however, gone far enough. The long-term goal of East European is clear enough. They want to rejoin Europe. (....)

That can be done, of course, only if all the European partners together confront three major interlocking issues on which Britain is well-placed to give leadership. The first (...). The second (...). And the third (...). On all these great questions, Mr. Hurd should spell out the Government's position clearly and soon, beginning perhaps when he visits East Berlin in a fortnight's time. He will be listened to with all the more attention because of the lead he has already begun to give.

(Appendix C1)
an Arabic speaker as a pro-argument, when it is in fact a counter argument. This is due to the fact that the Arabic speaker is conditioned to see the text-producer's thesis cited first and not the opponent's. One can even go further and say that the text-producer in Arabic counter-argument attempts to ignore the opponent's thesis, owing to the social and political situations, and by doing so, he avoids any kind of confrontation with whoever his adversary is. These are constraints rooted in the Arabic social, cultural and rhetorical systems.

In Arabic then, the text-producer's thesis is presented first, followed by a pro- or counter-argument. In English, it is the other way around: the opponent's thesis is presented first, followed by the text-producer's pro or counter claim. Both of these cases are followed by obligatory substantiation. The confusion of the opponent's thesis with the text-producer's thesis can lead to serious problems in translation. It is this rhetorical and cultural strategy of argumentation that should be considered carefully in translation; otherwise, the translator may produce an editorial which has a completely different meaning to that of the original.

In terms of the preceding observations, it should be emphasized that the presentation of an adversary's thesis is tied with English language conventions. It is uncommon for Arabic to present the adversary's view and then refute it. Because of the social and political systems, this is considered to be some sort of confrontation, which is actually not favoured.
It follows from all this that the way these two languages present their counter-argumentation causes some translation problems, and ignoring the fact that these rhetorical and linguistic styles are rooted in the social and cultural values of each language is indeed very serious. If these styles show anything, they show the fact that text-producers in both languages are affected by their own social and cultural backgrounds.

7.1.5. Coping with Arabic-English counter-argument

Because of the fact that Arabic and English utilize different rhetorical style for conveying their counter-argumentation, the Arabic reader is likely to misapprehend English counter-argument, and vice versa. However, the awareness of these rhetorical styles of both languages within the field of argumentation resolves this communicative problem. That is, the Arabic text-producer has to be aware of the intended meaning and the pattern of construction of the original text. Also, the translator should not allow the text structure to mislead him into misunderstanding the text-function or the intended meaning. As Callow (1974) argues, understanding the source text in translation is essential, and any misunderstanding is likely to be caused by misreading it and lacking the knowledge of the text-producer's patterns of thoughts. Therefore, when it comes to translating a text from Arabic into English, recognizing the structure as well as the function of the text in its pragmatic, semiotic, and communicative environments is indispensable.
To recap, aspects that could be the source of misapprehension are as follows:

1. An Arabic native speaker may see an English counter argument as a pro-argument being misguided by certain pragmatic characteristics (e.g. in the above editorial text-form: 'he was right', 'he rightly said'... etc.)

2. A native Arabic translator may be misguided by the English counter-argument format.

3. An English translator may misapprehend certain rhetorical notions in an Arabic counter-argument; he may think that the 'thesis' cited first is the text-producer's adversary's thesis, but in fact it is the text-producer's thesis itself.

In all the above cases, the misapprehension of the methods of construction, rhetorical function of certain lexical items, (i.e. emphasis, etc.), and patterns of thought may lead the translator to distort the original text; it may also cause a failure to realize the meaning as well as the function of the text. This is important in all aspects of translation. In the case of Arabic argumentation and editorials in particular, the translator should be aware of the fact that in a counter-argument, the adversary's thesis should be cited first, then the text-producer's counter-claim. In this way, the text-producer
is establishing a pattern of construction and a style of argumentation that matches the pattern and style of argumentation in English.
8.0 Introduction

The main purpose of this thesis has been to investigate Arabic argumentative discourse in general and Arabic argumentative editorial text-forms in particular. This thesis has attempted to shed more light on the descriptive as well as the analytical and the methodical models of argumentation in Arabic.

Owing to the fact that argumentation is held to be culture-specific (Longacre 1974c, 1983), structural, semantic as well as pragma-semio-textual analyses have been applied to these text-forms. The main reason behind the analysis of these editorials is to find out whether or not these argumentative text-forms pose problems when translated literally into English. To this effect, samples were taken from three different Arabic newspapers: Al-Ahram, Al-Ra'y, and Al-Watan. The samples have been analyzed in an attempt to identify the generic structure of editorials, the type of clause relations typical of this form of argumentation, the effect of repetition and parallelism, and the underlying function of theme-rheme constituency, and the types of problems this discourse raises for translators.
Furthermore, this study has endeavored to ascertain the contribution of causal relations, repetition, parallelism, theme rheme, and other semantic relations within this form of argumentation. The results of the analyses can be summarized as follows:

8.1 The generic structure of editorials

The preceding analysis has indicated that editorials, as an argumentative text-form within an argumentative text-type, have their own generic structure; this generic structure is presented in three or four stages: in the first stage, the text-producer presents background information regarding his argument (see Sinclair et al, 1987). This is done by providing either time or space or information references in respect to his topic. In the second stage, the text-producer presents his thesis. This may or may not be presented within the references to background information; most of the time, however, the thesis is presented implicitly. In the third stage, the text-producer evaluates his topic positively (i.e. pro-argument) or negatively (i.e. counter-argument). This is followed by an obligatory substantiation of his claim. Substantiation can take different forms such as presenting purposes, reasons, etc, so as to clarify and support the statement made.

In the fourth and final stage, these issues are summarized and argued, through an exhortative conclusion whose main function
is to remind, urge, emphasize, and, above all, persuade the reader of the text-producer's main point. This is done by summarizing the main arguments and drawing some inferences or implications as to what should happen and how it should happen. All these elements are represented in the following diagram:

The above diagram shows the main constituents of the argumentative text-form 'editorials'. The constituents are presented through a notation system, adopted from Lockwood (1982) "Introduction to Startificational Linguistics". As shown above,
the constituent 'situation' is realized as ($\square$). This means that the diagram describes this constituent as having either a temporal component, a spatial component, or an informational component. These components are the three alternative realizations of the constituent 'situation'. The notation system also shows that either one, or two or all three of these components may occur simultaneously in a particular text. This simultaneity is shown within Temp., Spat., and Infor. through the linking symbol ( $\searrow$).

As for the constituent 'thesis', it is realized by the notation system ($\triangle$) which means that 'substantiation' is an optional component. The thesis may here be followed by substantiation or it may not. There is a link ($\wedge$) between the constituent 'situation' and that of the 'thesis'. This link implies that these two constituents may sometimes be presented as one constituent.

The third constituent is the 'text-producer's evaluation'. This is presented as ($\bigtriangleup$). This means that an editorial text-form may be a pro-argument or it may be a counter-argument. Both of these sub-components are followed by obligatory substantiation.

The final constituent is that of the 'text-producer's' exhortative conclusion. This is represented as ($\bigcirc$). This means that a conclusion can be 'by summary' or 'by argumentation'. The text-producer either summarizes the main arguments or draws some conclusions by argumentation. Both of these sub-components should draw implications as to what it is that the text-producer is trying to accomplish. There is a link
between these two sub-components, which is represented by the symbol (\(\lor\)); this means that these two elements may occur simultaneously within this constituent.

This is only as far as the main constituents of editorials are concerned; however in terms of the manifestation of cohesion, the analysis has shown that the constituents 'situation and thesis', are characterized by specificity (i.e. focusing on specific social and cultural events) and information density (i.e. they include an account of the main arguments). The constituent 'evaluation' is realized by modality and parallelism. The final constituent which is conclusion is realized by emphasis, assertion, and notional repetition. All these aspects are shown in the above diagram. For the manifestations of the main constituents of our editorials and the types of relation involved, see Appendix A.

8.2 Types of clause relations

It has been shown that editorials are dominated by semantic causal relations. These are demonstrated in Diagram 19 (page 236) and Table 3 (page 235). It was noted earlier that according to Kress & Hodge (1979: 17), editorials are 'the place where the process of selection and assimilation of rewriting and transformation are most dense'. That is, the writers of editorials highlight participant relations that strengthen their argument, and obscure those participant relations that weaken
their argument (see pp. 237-239 for exemplification). For translation purposes, the reader/translator must know the information and understand it thoroughly in order to convey it convincingly to the outside reader, since each text-type relays these relations differently. Kress & Hodge argue that editorials are complex and revealing; they present a complex judgement or process; they argue that in order to understand any process, causality is of decisive significance. Even though Kress & Hodge make the point that editorials do not always show this particular feature, they argue that when the causal steps are clearly indicated - those who started an action are specified, the effects are shown - and those affected by such actions are mentioned, then, we, as text-receivers, can be sure that our judgement, whether we believe the text-producer's assessment of the topic or not, is clearly justified and made on 'reasonably secure grounds' (Kress & Hodge 1979: 18). This, in Kress & Hodge's sense, can easily be seen in our editorials where those affecting and those affected are clearly identified.

8.3 The effect of lexical repetition

It has been demonstrated that lexical repetition is an essential element in editorials. The conclusion drawn from the previous analyses is that these argumentative text-forms favor the cohesive type of lexical repetition; they do not favor pronominal co-reference as this phenomenon creates confusion within the text-form (see Section 7.1.1.2). This feature -
pronominal co-reference - is frequently used in expository texts, (i.e. novels, stories, etc). Even where pronominal reference is used in editorials, it tends to be short. Diagram 25 (p. 270) above shows exactly what I mean.

8.4 The persuasive function of parallelism

Parallelism as a form of repetition has a persuasive function in editorials. As was suggested in Chapter (6), parallelism is used as a rhetorical and text-building device. Three types of parallelism have been investigated: listing parallelism, which involves the repetition of the same lexical item; cumulative parallelism which involves lexical items that are semantically related, and the grammatical parallelism which shows that the grammatical status of the repeated lexical item is equal to that of the preceding. All these kinds of parallelism provide textual unity and persuasive force; they also indicate that the value of these parallel frames is the same, which, in turn, keeps the text-reader tuned to the argument and contribute rhetorically. As a result, the text-reader perceives a logical, cohesive, and forceful text. This can also be achieved by attracting new material in every recurrent clause.

8.5 Approach to translating editorials

It was suggested earlier that editorials have a semantic structure and stylistic characteristics that cause problems for the English reader (see Section 7.4). These characteristics
require attention during the process of translation. Because of the fact that Arabic editorials cannot be translated without reference to the rhetorical and cultural elements that constitute their central core, overt translation in House's (1977) sense, which is tied up to the rhetoric and culture of that community, would shed light on this type of discourse.

Moreover, in translating Arabic editorials, the translator has to go through different stages. First, he has to read and analyze the text—from a semantic, structural, and stylistic point of view. Then, while decoding these text-forms into the target language, the translator should be aware of various functional components: the semiotic (i.e. cultural and rhetorical), pragmatic (i.e. the speaker's intentions and the effect and purpose of the ST), and the communicative (i.e. the function of the editorial text-form and the pattern of construction). Within the category of communicative function, the style, manner, and the method of construing the meaning of these text-forms have to be accounted for. Communicative function also touches upon notions such as how the text-form is initiated, what strategy the translator uses, and whether these notions have been utilized for stylistic or pragmatic reasons.

After these contextual factors have been accounted for, the translator has to re-assess these text-forms in order to fit them within the expectations of target language speakers. This requires a modification process where certain items need to be inserted for purposes of clarity, while other items need to be deleted because of their redundancy. Finally, there are certain items that need to be maintained as in the original as these items clarify the speaker's train of thought. This modification
process bring us to the translation product in which the two languages concerned have been studied and approximated to one another in terms of all the contextual factors mentioned above. All these stages which are involved within the process of translating Arabic editorials are summarized in the following diagram:

Diagram (28)
The process of translating Arabic argumentative texts
The stages shown in the above diagram are intended here to facilitate the process of translating Arabic editorials. This strategy is not only applicable to this form of argumentation but it may be applied to other Arabic argumentative text-forms as well. The emphasis throughout is on all aspects that have an intrinsic effect on translation so that the contexts of the original texts are carefully studied and conveyed into the target texts.

8.6 Implications for future research

It is axiomatic that this thesis cannot, in fact, give resolutions to all problems or issues raised here. Therefore, future research must be conducted to explore the effects of these same and other rhetorical and cohesive devices on these text-forms as well as other argumentative text-forms such as political speeches, sermons, etc. Of equal importance is a demonstration of the cohesive manifestations of these text-forms as well as their effectiveness. For instance, do surface structure elements contribute to the coherence of these text-forms? Is repetition a rhetorical as well as a cohesive device in other argumentative text-forms too? Above all, is it homogeneous or is it a variable dictated by the type of text involved? All these provide insights into the ways in which different text-types tend to be structured and organized; they also provide, from a pedagogical perspective, ways of specifying as well as teaching the differences between one language and another.
Furthermore, it may prove beneficial to explore other ways of demystifying argumentative text-forms in Arabic through the different textual standards as demonstrated by De Beaugrande & Dressler (1981). These standards ensure connectedness of logical relations, situations, our knowledge of the world, events, etc. This particular framework would seem to provide a revealing and worthwhile basis for future research on forms of argumentation.

One final point that needs to be raised here is the contextual variables of any text - including editorial text-forms. These are pragmatics, semiotics and their contribution, not only to translation, but also to cross-cultural and communal interaction. All these may prove useful and illuminating in minimizing the difficulties in cross-cultural communication; they may also give insights into the best way of approaching a text.
The following abbreviations are used throughout Appendix A:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ampl-Contrac:</td>
<td>Amplification-Contraction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Develop:</td>
<td>Developmental</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NDC:</td>
<td>Non-defining clause</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rhet:</td>
<td>Rhetorical</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emph:</td>
<td>Emphatic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MS:</td>
<td>Matching support</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen-Spec:</td>
<td>Generic-Specific</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contra-Expect:</td>
<td>Contra-Expectation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp/Conclusion:</td>
<td>Temporal in a form of conclusion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod:</td>
<td>Modal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Condition-Sem:</td>
<td>Condition from a semantic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consequence-Prag:</td>
<td>Consequence from a pragmatic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consequence-Sem:</td>
<td>Consequence from a semantic point of view</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Counter-Exp-Prug:</td>
<td>Counter-expectation from a pragmatic point of view</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Appendix A
**Analysis of Arabic Editorials**

#### Al-sharq - 3/3/1989

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Producer’s Evaluation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>alshah al-un kahf wahsus fi mu’tanati al-darab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ann al-jayara al-asf piyaddid al-yasbat al-salayt</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-pacira al-qalal</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-inflajir al-salaliyya yahindu mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-inflajir al-salaliyya yahindu mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-inflajir al-salaliyya yahindu mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-inflajir al-salaliyya yahindu mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-inflajir al-salaliyya yahindu mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-inflajir al-salaliyya yahindu mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>al-tajjarat u s al-mahjoudiyya u al-inflajir al-salaliyya</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buhun yahor yahadun ma fi al-nafid bi al-sagawal bi al-bibhi bi cjud lid hawin mi tanawila maliy</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na hina yill al-tahsib al-takhhsibi u al-tajjul u al-arab</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma al-wali</td>
<td>Result</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Text-Producer’s Evaluation

**Conclusion**

*The text*...
السيرة النبوية

1. في مَنّى بالله عليه وسلم، الذي يُعرف بالنبي محمد. 
2. في البَنَايِن، التي تشمل جميع الأحداث الحياتية للنبي.
3. في الْتحَمِّل، التي تشمل العديد من الأحداث التاريخية.
4. في الأَدْبِ، التي تشمل الأدب العربي.
5. في الخَلْقِ، التي تشمل الخلق العام.
6. في العَدْلِ، التي تشمل العدالة في المجتمع.
7. في الخِلْقِ، التي تشمل الخلق العام.
8. في الْحَزَبِ، التي تشمل الحزب العربي.
9. في الأَدْبِ، التي تشمل الأدب العربي.
10. في الخَلْقِ، التي تشمل الخلق العام.
11. في الْتحَمِّل، التي تشمل جميع الأحداث الحياتية للنبي.
12. في البَنَايِن، التي تشمل جميع الأحداث الحياتية للنبي.
13. في الأَدْبِ، التي تشمل الأدب العربي.
14. في الخَلْقِ، التي تشمل الخلق العام.
15. في الخِلْقِ، التي تشمل الخلق العام.
16. في الْتحَمِّل، التي تشمل جميع الأحداث الحياتية للنبي.
17. في البَنَايِن، التي تشمل جميع الأحداث الحياتية للنبي.
1. قسمتي الموجبة في ما الـ: .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي كيمياء ... 12 القراء ... نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
2. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
3. (التفاوض على استغلال ما الأروبيات الأصلية ...
4. نحن نعترف أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
5. فإنه يمكن أن نقول ...
6. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
7. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
8. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
9. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
10. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
11. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
12. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
13. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
14. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
15. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
16. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
17. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
18. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
19. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
20. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
21. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
22. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
23. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
24. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
25. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
26. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
27. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
28. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......
29. نحن نعلم أن التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .......

المؤلف: علي الكرم - 28 / 5 / 1959

الموضوع: تحليل الأقول في ما التأكد من أن قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي .... قسمتي المعتاد نصي ....
1. النَّاسِ يُزِيدُونَ في أنفسهم الأَمْكَانَاتِ الَّتِي يُعْرَفُونَ بِهَا كَيْفَ مَا يَأْخَذُوهُمُ الْبَعْضُ وَالآَخَرُ.  
2. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
3. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
4. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
5. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
6. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
7. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
8. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
9. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
10. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
11. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
12. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
13. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
14. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
15. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
16. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
17. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
18. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
19. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
20. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
21. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
22. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
23. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
24. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
25. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
26. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
27. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
28. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
29. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
30. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
31. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
32. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
33. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
34. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.  
35. هُؤُلَاءِ الْفِتْيَةُ يُعَدُّونَ الْأَنْفُسَ الَّتِيْنَ غَيْرُهُمْ أَقُلُوبًا.
الإجابة على سؤال

1. "لـ الله

2. إنما الله

3. بـ الله

4. على الله

5. في الله

6. على الله

7. إنما الله

8. بـ الله

9. على الله

10. على الله

11. إنما الله

12. بـ الله

13. على الله

14. على الله

15. إنما الله

16. بـ الله

17. على الله

18. إنما الله

19. بـ الله

20. على الله

21. إنما الله

22. بـ الله

23. على الله

24. إنما الله

25. بـ الله

26. على الله

27. إنما الله

28. بـ الله

29. على الله

30. إنما الله

31. بـ الله

32. على الله

33. إنما الله

34. بـ الله

35. على الله

36. إنما الله

37. بـ الله

38. على الله

39. إنما الله

40. بـ الله

41. على الله

42. إنما الله

43. بـ الله

44. على الله

45. إنما الله

46. بـ الله

47. على الله

48. إنما الله

49. بـ الله

50. على الله

51. إنما الله

52. بـ الله

53. على الله

54. إنما الله

55. بـ الله

56. على الله

57. إنما الله

58. بـ الله

59. على الله

60. إنما الله

61. بـ الله

62. على الله

63. إنما الله

64. بـ الله

65. على الله

66. إنما الله

67. بـ الله

68. على الله

69. إنما الله

70. بـ الله

71. على الله

72. إنما الله

73. بـ الله

74. على الله

75. إنما الله

76. بـ الله

77. على الله

78. إنما الله

79. بـ الله

80. على الله

81. إنما الله

82. بـ الله

83. على الله

84. إنما الله

85. بـ الله

86. على الله

87. إنما الله

88. بـ الله

89. على الله

90. إنما الله

91. بـ الله

92. على الله

93. إنما الله

94. بـ الله

95. على الله

96. إنما الله

97. بـ الله

98. على الله

99. إنما الله

100. بـ الله

101. على الله

102. إنما الله

103. بـ الله

104. على الله

105. إنما الله

106. بـ الله

107. على الله

108. إنما الله

109. بـ الله

110. على الله

111. إنما الله

112. بـ الله
1. A condition

2. A condition

3. A condition

4. A condition

5. A condition

6. A condition

7. A condition

8. A condition

9. A condition

10. A condition

11. A condition

12. A condition

13. A condition

14. A condition

15. A condition

16. A condition

17. A condition

18. A condition

19. A condition

20. A condition

21. A condition

22. A condition

23. A condition

24. A condition

25. A condition

26. A condition

27. A condition

28. A condition

29. A condition

30. A condition

31. A condition

32. A condition

33. A condition

34. A condition

35. A condition

36. A condition

37. A condition

38. A condition

39. A condition

40. A condition

41. A condition

42. A condition

43. A condition

44. A condition

45. A condition

46. A condition

47. A condition

48. A condition

49. A condition

50. A condition
التأجر العرف

1. عمان ذات الافتراض
2. فئة في المكاسب
3. في المكاسب
4. في المكاسب
5. في المكاسب
6. في المكاسب
7. في المكاسب
8. في المكاسب
9. في المكاسب
10. في المكاسب
11. في المكاسب
12. في المكاسب
13. في المكاسب
14. في المكاسب
15. في المكاسب
16. في المكاسب
17. في المكاسب
18. في المكاسب
19. في المكاسب
20. في المكاسب
21. في المكاسب
22. في المكاسب
23. في المكاسب
24. في المكاسب
25. في المكاسب

Text Producer's Situation 

Text Producer's Evaluation

Thesis

Conclusion

Reference
الموضوع

1. تمامًا ما حل الفراغات في السياقات وثوابت التاحيلات الأعلى
2. ما هو الأثر على التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابت التاحيلات الأعلى
3. يستدعي حجم التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابت التاحيلات الأعلى
4. كيف يتم التعامل مع التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابت التاحيلات الأعلى
5. وما هي الأسباب للتأجيل وثوابت التاحيلات الأعلى
6. من هو المكلف بتحديد التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابت التاحيلات الأعلى

المحتوى العام

1. ما هي التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
2. كيف يتم التعامل مع التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
3. من هو المكلف بتحديد التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى

التحليل

1. التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
2. كيف يتم التعامل مع التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
3. من هو المكلف بتحديد التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى

الاستنتاج

1. هما التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
2. كيف يتم التعامل مع التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
3. من هو المكلف بتحديد التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى

الخاتمة

1. ما هي التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
2. كيف يتم التعامل مع التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى
3. من هو المكلف بتحديد التأخيرات في التأجيل وثوابات التاحيلات الأعلى

357
1. بِيَرْتِـيِنَ ُـنَب ُثِـجَدنَ ـث ُـيِرْـسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

2. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

3. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

4. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

5. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

6. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

7. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

8. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

9. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

10. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

11. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

12. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

13. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ


15. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ


17. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

18. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

19. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

20. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

21. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

22. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

23. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

24. فَيَسِـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي ـيَـنِـسَـيِدَـي

25. عَـنَب ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ ُـنَب ُـجَـيِنَ

ittifāq al-yamaniyyah

1. al-ittifāq al-ażā'ī tamam al-taṣawqūqīs ilā yadī biḥrayn al-yaman
2. al-istiqāṣ al-ḥiṣnī tamam al-suṣūqalī biḥrayn al-pilal bi yaman
3. al-baytīk biḥrayn qāfī biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
4. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
5. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
6. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
7. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
8. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
9. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
10. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
11. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
12. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
13. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
14. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
15. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
16. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
17. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
18. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
19. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
20. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
21. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
22. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
23. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
24. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
25. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
26. al-baytīk biḥrayn al-yaman biḥrayn al-yaman
العنوان:

الإسهام في تعريف ما يعنيه "الفقه" في Frameworks:tıce tilist Al- 

1. يابع — modal
2. علاج باطل الوضعية فإنه، في مجال
3. في مجال
4. يابع — modal
5. علاج باطل الوضعية فإنه، في مجال
6. في مجال
7. في مجال
8. في مجال
9. في مجال
10. في مجال
11. في مجال
12. في مجال
13. في مجال
14. في مجال
15. في مجال
16. في مجال
17. في مجال
18. في مجال
19. في مجال
20. في مجال
21. في مجال
22. في مجال
23. في مجال
24. في مجال
25. في مجال
26. في مجال
27. في مجال
28. في مجال
29. في مجال
30. في مجال
31. في مجال
32. في مجال
33. في مجال
34. في مجال
35. في مجال
36. في مجال

التشخيص النهاي:
لا يمكنني قراءة النص العربي المكتوب بشكل غير واضح. إذا كنت بحاجة إلى مساعدة في شيء آخر، فاكتب لي النص العربي بشكل أكثر ص록ة أو قم بإعادة كتابته بشكل أكثر شرعية.
الشعاوي فاتحلا الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
1. ۱۳. (ملك في مساحة) مثلاً يقصد
2. ۹. لن ت운동 الجرذان الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـمصـدـقٌةٌ الـمضـتِـسٌةٌ الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
3. ۸. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ مثلاً
4. ۷. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ مثلاً
5. ۶. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ مثلاً
6. ۵. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
7. ۴. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
8. ۳. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
9. ۲. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
10. ۱. في الـمـالـٌلٌلَنَلَاثٌ الـطـارٌـيـرٌّ النَّـمـٌمٌدٌلٌ
لا يمكنني قراءة النص العربي بشكل طبيعي.

يرجى تقديم النص باللغة الإنجليزية.
أُلِّي: مَاْ有更好的 ٢٢ /١١ /١٩٨٩

الرايحة إلى المسرحيات في estado،

1. bi al-aṣari ََاصْرَأَرْبَأَ بِيْل، الـْاْرْأَرْبَأَ الـْاْرْأَرْبَأَ قَتْدَأت
2. wa ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
3. wa in kāna tā’īyya ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
4. fa inna al-jār ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
5. (الْاْرْأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ)
6. innaa yauhin al-fāha ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
7. wa ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
8. wa ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
9. wa ina ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
10. wa ina ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
11. wa ina ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
12. wa ina ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ ََصْرَأَرْبَأَ
Appendix B
Arabic original editorials and their translation

El-Ahram - 8 / 3 / 1989

ङ्गरुः al-infljär
effects the-explosion

(1) åkkada al-ra'īs busī āubah fī mu'tamari al-duwāt (2) anna al-kaḍṭara al-laṭṭif
confirmed the-president busi Mubarak in conference the-Duwarah that the-danger which
yuḥadd地 al-muṭṭāma al-miḍriy tūlūṭiyu al-taḥāteb: (3) al-taṭārrufu wa al-muḥaddirītū threatens the-society the-Egyptian threefold the-ramifications: the-fundamentalism and the-drugs
wa al-infljāru al-sukkāniy, (4) wa huwa sarūs yumkinu maṣ istifḥālih ann yūḏ bi
and the-explosion the-population, and it-matter could with becoming-grave-its will lead in
mustaḥbalī al-bīlādi bīma yūfī ilayhi min cawgība wājīhah (5) wa hiya
future the-country in lead to-it from consequences evil and are-they
sāla al-tartīb: al-irḥābu wa al-ijārmu wa al-kārāb.

(6) wa al-wuqūfu anna (7) al-infljāra al-sukkāniy yumkinu an yakūna muṭaffirra kullā
and the-fact that the-explosion the-population could to be-outbreaker all
al-marākik cībra sīllāṭin min ruḍūdī al-asfāl (8) kullum min-hu yahmilu nūdara al-kaḍṭāri
the-problems through series from reactions the-deed each from-them carries warning the-danger
fi ḥaddī dātīh. (9) fa huwa yu'addī maṣ giyābi al-kītaṭi al-taḥṣasubiyah wa qusūri
because is-it lead with absence the-plans the-expected and short
al-marqubati wa iftiqāri al-qudrah ila al-fawāiddyah ilā mū yūbihu al-gūla
the-supervision and lack the-ability to the-effective to what look like the-beast
al-laṭṭif al-ṣīlātā al-muṭṭāma, (10) fa huwa yasadū al-baṭālah (11) wa
which devours entity the-society, a result is-it increase the-unemployment and
yulhibu al-tadakhām (12) wa yūḏi al-fasād. (13) wa kullu-hā ʿāfūṭun (14) yatawlaḍu maṛa-hā
inflames the-inflation and spreads the-corruption. and all-them evils generate with-them
التقدّم في الجينات: (15) التفاقم الديني البدائي والمجتمع. التطرف، العنف، النجوع
والتخلي عن المجتمع، وارتفاع الجريمة، وتعاطي المخدرات.

(16) من المجتمعات ولا تعود. النجوع، نتائج التطرف، النزاعات.
والتنمية، والنمو. منجع اجتماعي.

(17) الزيادة في السكان، إجراءات علاجية في المناخ.
وتوزيع الحسابات.

(18) تحقيق الريادة. الاهتمام بالمناصب.
وتوزيع الموارد، وبناء القواعد.

(19) النمو الصناعي، والتجاري.
والتكنولوجي، ولكنها تحدث العملية.

(20) النجاح في التحريك.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(21) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(22) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(23) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(24) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(25) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(26) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(27) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(28) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(29) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.

(30) توسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
وتوزيع الأموال والثروة، والزراعة، والتجارة.
وتوسع في الموارد المدنية والتجارية.
والمدى.
were musaddin al-tanmiyyah fi ann al-majālīt, (25) bal taghihi il-ba'ahu al-kašratu
with rates the-development in all the-fields, but become burdens-its the-dangerous

cuwinu musaidan li ba'dhi al-musadilat kal ma'isin yudhiku al-mujaddma fi
factor corrupting to these the-rates on way meddle the-society in
dawira musragha tu'add biхи ilā al-imhīdat, wa al-itaradī wa intihāri
circles empty lead in-it to the-decline and the-degradation and spread
al-fansa wa hasīmati kullu akbaru al-taqaddum in ibra intifālī al-nuqūṣī al-fardīyyati
the-disorder and conquer all objectives the-progress through spread the-defects the-individual
wa al-itlimātiyyati wa 'uṣūri al-imhīlat fī al-jawāniyy al-ta'sūmiliiyyah.

and the-social and spread the-corruption in the-sides the-dealings.

(26) wa 'indāna 'ataximmu al-la'īf li 'asbin āttā, (27) falla 'udda ann tūd'āa
and when be in crisis the-situations to reasons whatever, it-is necessary to put
al-wwadiyyāt, (28) ma'ākila wa 'iljjītīn fi makhīthā al-qašīh. (29) id.lan yakūna min
the-priorities, problems and solutions in places-their the-right. because will not be from
al-musfi biţla kullu al-juhdī wa al-rasā'ī fī majālī al-tanmiyyah li
the-useful bestow all the-effort and the-endeavour in fields the-development to
ta'tiya al-niyādīt al-sukkāniyyat fā talabahma al-tama'rāt awsalam bi awsal 'wa
come the-increases the-population so as swallow the-fruition gradually in gradually and
tu'da al-ḥula ilā ma huwa aswa'. (30) 'inda'idīn yakūna al-tamālu al-jāddī
restores the-situation to what is worse. when that happens be the-action the-serious
al-muntāma bi majhāti ḥarțim fī al-bāhr.
the-fatal as equal to plowing in the-sea.

(31) wa idā 'ākkā al-injihārā al-sukkāniyy 'alā ba'dhā al-nahw huwa al-taḥaddīf
and if were it the-explosion the-population on this the-way is-it the-challenge
al-akbaru li 'uqūdān qādimah, (32) fa inna al-raja'a 'an wu'alajati-hi yū'addī bi
the-biggest to generations coming, then that the-failure about solving-it leads in
al-ṣārūrātī ilā 'ajzīn fī muṣḥahatī sā'īri al-taḥaddiyāt (33) ḥattā wa in kunū
the-necessity to failure in confronting all the-challenges even and in were
The Effects of Population Explosion

(1) The Egyptian president, Husni Mubarak, affirmed, in the conference of ‘Du’ah’, (2) that there are three dangers which threaten the Egyptian society: (3) namely fundamentalism, drugs, and population increase. (4) These dangers could, if become critical, lead in the future to drastic results (5) such as terrorism, crimes, and ruination.

(6) In fact, (7), the population explosion could, through a chain reaction, break up all these problems (8) with each one bearing its own harbinger of danger. (9) Because, with the absence of the expected planning, deficiency of supervision, and lack of effective administration, the population explosion could turn society into a monster ravishing itself; (10) it will also increase unemployment; (11) it will inflate inflation (12) and it will spread corruption. (13) All these are evils (14) which lead to fundamentalism from two sides: (15) one being the violence of terrorism which stems from laying the blame on society and the other being the escapism and drug addiction born from alienation and desperation of those within society.

(16) The increase in population could of itself be a positive factor in determining the strength of the country, (17) since human resources are in effect the most important reservoir for development, (18) if were to be invested properly in exploiting all the natural resources of the country, (19) and if they were to be invested in the entrepreneurial work creating complementary industrial resources. (20) This is the basis on which to build (21) in order to utilize the country’s vast resources in terms of land area with its wealth of minerals and farmland, and to develop industrial and commercial growth in the consumer and the export sectors, together with military and technological capabilities. (22) Above all, population growth is an essential factor for moral achievement politically, socially, and culturally.

(23) However, the population growth will inevitably turn into a factor of depression and regression, (24) if it is not checked to keep pace with developments in all other fields. (25) Also, the grave burden of population growth will weigh too heavily and will eat into society bringing decline, degradation, and anarchy with it.

(26) So when crisis looms for whatever reasons, (27) priorities must be set. (28) Problems and solutions must be put in their correct perspective. (29) Because it would be futile to waste time and effort in development projects only to see population growth the achievement leaving us worse off than before. (30) At that time, any serious action would become like ploughing in the sea.

(31) So if the increase of population is the greatest challenge facing future generations, (32) then, the inability to tackle it will lead to failure in coping with other challenges, (33) even if we were in a position to deal with them.
ال-recognition two-fold

(1) laysa min al-tajib (2) an taṣđura ḍātu al-kalimāti taqřīban min tallī
not from the-strange to issue same the-words nearly from Tel

abīb wa waṣīntūn fi al-tahānī min ḍa‘alī qarārātī al-nu‘tāmari al-waṭāniy
Abūb and Washington in the-dissease from make resolutions the-conference the-national

al-filistīnī. (3) fa i-līnu al-dawlāt al-marūfū (4) wa al-taṣāḥhadu bi nabī al-īrābī
the-Palestinian. as declaration the-state refused and the-advocacy in discarding the-terrorism

gāru kūfīn (5) wa qaḥūb al-qarārayn 242 wa 338 gūṣidūn jiddān
not enough and acceptance the-two-resolutions 242 and 338 ambiguous very

(6) wa al-lictirāfū bi isrā‘īl mūhānum li al-gāyāh!
and the-recognition in Israel vague to the-extremely

(7) wa iğī kīn photo mubārīrātu al-raqī quṣūshaytah bayna al-jānibayn (8) fa inna
and if were justifications the-refusal different between the-two-sides (fa) that

al-nagāta ṣāḥibah wa baldūta al-tanāṣiq wa al-tanawq! (9) wa laysa
the-tone one and far-reaching the-arraying and the-harmony! and not

al-taṣībū (10) fi an yakhūn huṣūka mīṣū huḏū al-tawāfūq (11) mā dūsa huṣūka tāḥālfūn
the-shaie in to be there like this the-conformity as long as there alliance

istirāṭijī bayna al-dawlātayn, (12) faṣādān sa‘al fīlīyātī al-taṣāwunī al-tārīqīy
strategic between the-two countries, in addition about backgrounds the-cooperation the-historical

al-maṭrūfāt bi-haymah, (13) wa īʿānīnī al-tāṣba al-pārīkā (14) buṣā al-tawānu
the-known between-them, and but the-shaie the-gross in-it the-contentation

fi al-qarārātī bi usūbī mā lān yaqra’u-hū, qw mān qara‘a-hū wa ḍa‘a bi inārī-hū
in the-resolution in method who has not read-them, or who read-them and take refuge denying-them

talī al-mēla’!
on the-people!
(15) fu'ûn wâjih (16) an takûn muqâwam al-qâhratî istarîbatan li ragabat-an arikâyatin
atrocities clear to be most the-resolutions response to wishes American
mutassâlîbâh wa munfarîdah tâlî 'aðadân sanawâtîn ðisol, (17) ðumma ya'tî al-ku'dhânu
firm and isolated on range years long, then come the-disappointment
al-mubîn min jûnîbî sâhîntun nafsi-ðâ, (18) ðattâ ra'ay-ðâ al-mutahaddîtha bi liwâni
the-clear from side Washington self-it, even saw-we the-spokesman in tongue
al-kârijîyyatî al-arîkiyyah yata'dâkallu rasmiyyan (19) li taqâbli 'ra'yin" ab'dhû al-ra'îs
the-foreign the-American intervene-he formally to correct 'opinion' expressed the-presidential
rayyan fi ðiwârî bi maqÎ gâhîfi (20) ðindâmû su'lla (21) ðamaâ lidâ kânat arîkû
Reagan in discussion-his with journalist when was asked-he about if were American
musta'didatun al-ðn li al-du'dûl fi ðiwârîn maqÎ al-su'âzamah (22) bâda qubîli-ðâ
ready the-now to the-entry discussion with the-organisation after acceptance-its
li qarâray al-umam al-mutahdidah, (23) wa huwa al-ðartû al-arîkiyy al-ma'rûf, (24) fa
to two resolutions the-nation the-united, and is it the-condition the-American the-known, then
qûlû (25) ana bâdû al-mawzûq gâyda al-bahîti al-ðn. (26) wa hunnâ tadaqqûla
said-he that this the-subject under the-investigation the-now, and here intervened-he
al-mutahaddîthu (27) li ðu'lîna (28) ana al-ra'îs "yaqâdû" (29) ana ghararîti al-majlisî biya
the-spokesman to announce that the-president means that resolutions the-council are
allâtî yajrî bâhû-ðâ al-ðn!
which conduct investigation-them the-now!
(30) wa muqâwâm al-mawzîf al-arîkiyy (31) ana al-qâhratî al-fili's'tîyyah
and sum the-stance the-American is that the-resolutions the-Palestinian
and sum the-stance-the-Palestinian is that the-resolutions the-Palestinian
and sum the-news the-Palestinian is that the-resolutions the-Palestinian
tabû muqâjîtah (32) wa lâkînna-ðâ garyr kâfiyâthin (33) li tagyrið bâdû
seem encouraging and but-they not enough to change this
al-mawzîf, (34) wa bâdû ma'sâmû bâtût-hu al-ðal al-sîlîy wa ma'sâmîl li nîm
the-stance, and this means-its tos away the-solution the-peaceful and efforts to
mustaâbâlin al-majbûl, (35) wa ðalîbûtu fura'smân akhat marân isrâ'î (36) li tuwâgîla
future unknown and allow opportunities bigger before Israel to continue
mukaṭṭat-ḥū fi al-ḥārā ḫaṣṣā "al-ma’mūlī" ṭalā al-intifāḍah wa taḥṣīṭī al-ḥārā (37) alladi plans-its in the-termination the-hoped for on the-uprising and scatter the-people which

jaru‘a fi ǧīśamī mājāl-hī ṭalā al-faṣḥātī (38) bi ʾi-lānī al-dawlāh, (39) ḥattā dared in mid struggle-its on the-joy in declare the-state, even

law kūna dālīka la yaṣāʾu ṭalā al-warāq, (40) ʿumma ṣāḥī al-bābī if was that not still on the-papers, then open the-door

ṣawāṣa al-ḥuqūqāt al-jadīdāt fi wāṣmatun (41) li ṭatawattaṣaṣa bi ḍāṭī al-mansūf before the-government the-new in Washington to keep in same the-stance

(42) bi ʾl-tibbirī-ḥū ḥattā in ṭamādaṭi al-ḥiṣbī al-jumhūrī, (43) aw ḥattā wādi in being considered extension to policy the-party the-republican, or even put

ṣuʿūtan taʾṣīṣīṣyāṣṭi jadīdah! conditions miraculous! new!

(44) kawfa bi allāh lā yakūnu ḫunāka ʾl-tīrāfīn ṭarīḥun bi ʾisrāʾīlī fi how in God not be there recognition clear in Israel in

al-prungāt, (45) wa qad warada ṭī-bī hā badalu al-marāṣī mararās! (46) narratun the-resolutions and verily mentioned in-it instead the-once twice! once

fi faqrati ʾi-lānī al-dawlāh, (47) allatī taṣtanū ḫuṭṣāʾyātī qarārī in paragraph declaration the-state, which base to legitimacy resolution

al-tāqṣītī ʾaṣṣ 47, (48) wa hāḏī marāx-u al-taṣlisī bi wujūdī the-partition year 47, and this means-it the-submission in existence

al-dawlātī al-yahūdīyāt, (49) wa narratun fi faqrati qubbāl al-prungānī the-state the-Jewish, and once in paragraph acceptance the-two resolutions

(50) alladīni yataḥqamānī ṭīl-tīrāfīs aṣṣad bi al-wujūdī ʾal-ʾisrāʾīliy, (51) wa which-they contain the-recognition too in the-existence the-Israeli, and

la-tallā-ḥū narratun ṭūlīṭaṣ aṣṣad tilka allatī aṣṣā rā ṭī-bī qarārū ʾi-lānī al-dawlātī perhaps once third too that which pointed-he in-it resolution declaration the-state

li la-taʾṣīṣīṣī ḫu ṭalāmīn maʿ jayf al-duwālī al-miṣṣaqāh wa duwālī al-ṣāliḥi ajmāt! to co-existence in peace with all the-countries the-region and countries the-world all!
It is not surprising that the words used in Tell Abeeel were nearly the same as those used in Washington in the way they belittled the resolutions made in the Palestinian National Conference. For the declaration of the Palestinian state has been rejected, the commitment to the renunciation of terrorism did not go far enough, the acceptance of resolutions 242 and 338 was ambiguous, and the recognition of Israel was vague in the extreme! Even though the justification given by both Israel and U.S. for rejecting these resolutions are different, the tone is exactly the same! The disgrace here is not the unanimity between these two states, or the strategic alliance they have bearing in mind the historical precedents for collaboration between them. The disgrace is the maligning of the P.N.C.'s resolutions as never before.

It is a clear outrage that most of these resolutions came in response to relentless American demands made for many years. However, the evident failure came from Washington itself. We even saw the American Foreign Affairs spokesman formally intervene to correct the American President, Ronald Reagan, in an interviews with a journalist, when he was asked whether the United States is now ready to enter into negotiation with the PLO after its acceptance of the United Nations resolutions, since this is the only known American stipulation for direct negotiations with the PLO. The President replied that this issue was under review. But at this the spokesman immediately intervened to say that it was the Palestinian resolutions which were under review.

To summarize the American position then: although the resolutions of the Palestinian National Conference seem encouraging they are still not sufficient to change the American position. This means that a peaceful solution is a precarious undertaking, allowing Israel the greater opportunities to carry out its plan to 'hopefully' liquidate the uprising, and push the Palestinians into exile after they willingly struggled to declare their own state, if only on paper. This opens the way up for the new administration in Washington to take up the same stance extending the Republican Party's policy laying down even more impossible conditions.

How on earth could it be claimed that there is no Palestinian recognition of Israel when in fact the recognition has been mentioned twice? The first time is in the declaration of the Palestinian state, which is based primarily on the legitimacy of the 1947 partition resolution, recognizing the existence of the Jewish state. The second time is in the acceptance of resolutions 242 and 338, which also include recognition of Israel. There may be even a third time in the declaration resolution which states that the Palestinian state will co-exist peacefully with all the countries in the region and the world.

We deem the declared policy and principles of America a desertion of the right which has come in response to its own demands and conditions!
meeting the-solidarity

(1) تابعjualan في注明来源 الامامى المدينة على الروضة لي رعاية وسارية،

明日将在安曼开始讨论四个权力国家的经济新，埃及和约旦和伊拉克和也门

السامية، (2) لتحديد العقد.organizational to the-solidarity in preparation to

الشمال، (3) التمديد للكونference the-summit the-four-power which hold in Baghdad in late the-month the-present.

(5) والواقع أن الوضعية الاقتصادية المعالم (6) من الجد، التخلق مرحلة،

وإذнако أنه في الضرورة، (7) إلى أن به الذي}

السياسية العالية، ثم ثم ثم أن التفاصيل-

السياسي كان لا يقال على التي

المستقبلية، (8) من السياستية التي

الاجتماعية، (9) كلاه السعادة على أن يأخذ

الهدفات الشعوب المتلاشية الأغلى أربعة،

والعوامل الخطة الاستراتيجية العالية.

(10) وإن لم يشك في-it that the-solidarity is-it expression real

كان تعاوني السعودية على الماستارية في المستقبلي وقائما (12) بعد

بأي الاعتقادات الشعب البلدانية التوافقية في مستقبل الأثرية بعد
zawālī ʕaṭārīn kābrīn min aṯbāʿī maḏġila qasāwiyatiyati kūrijiyyah, (13) wa li disappearance portion large from burdens distractions national external, and to yakūna kafālka adāta taqāmulīn ṣadrīd wa al-takhattulūti al-igtiṣādiyyati fi orobbā be as that instrument dealings new with the-clustering the-economic fi Europe

wa aṯrīkā, (14) wa maḏgālan saḥīḥ li taṭawwurūti al-salāmī al-murtāqatī fi al-mintaqah wa and America, and entry right to developments the-peace the-expected in the-region and mā tajurruhu min tabīʿīti al-tamāli al-jiddiy wa al-nāḥīti (15) min aṣṣli what drags-it from successions the-action the-serious and the-active from sake

tahyīʿatin afdal li ṣawādī māṣūrīti al-ḥāyāh fi-mā baqīya min bāḏī preparation better to plunge courses the-life in what remain from this al-qarn wa avāʾīlu al-qarnī al-qādīm.

the-century and beginning the-century the-coming.

(16) wa tatawawatū al-dawalū al-arbaʿū bi mawṣūrīda baṣārīyyatin wa tāḥīyyatin and enjoy the-countries the-four in sources human and natural

wa ǧināʿiyatin hāʾilah (17) tajrīlu al-nubula maftūḥatān saʿmābu (18) li tāḥīqī and industrial huge make the-means opened before-theems to accomplish

awjōhin mutaṣāddidatīn min al-takāwwūl ʿīfi māṣūrīatin jammīhīyyatin faces multiple from-the-integration in projects public

wa ḥayawīyyatin, (19) bi al-idoṣāfati ilā māṣūrīatin qasāwīyyatin ruqīya kā al-ġināʿ-ṣāḥī and vital, in the-addition to projects national high like the-industries

al-ṣanāʿiyyatī wa al-tiknūlujiyyati wa taṣ̄īṭī al-ṭāqah. (20) wa bāḏībi al-māṣūrītu min the-military and the-technological and develop the-energy, and these the-projects from

kābīn hā an tuwaṭāfara la-bāḥ mawṣūrida naḏīyyatīn kābīrah (21) li istiṣāghā bi-ḥa ʿīfi sake-theirs to provide to-them sources money large to use-them in

maṣānīn min barāʾījī al-tamāli wa furaṣī al-taḥīl. (22) bāḏī ilā lā ma more from programs the-action and opportunities the-employment. this to what

tāḥīqī ʿuṭītin afdal fi al-tabādūli al-tijāriyy, wa tāḥīnī mawṣūrī al-madīrūtā, achieve conditions better in the-exchange the-commercial, and improve scales the-payments,
wa iktimābī quwatīn wa fasāliytin āydan fi al-taʾīri al-ṣiyāsi li ẓalīḥī al-qāfīyīn
and gain power and effectiveness too in the-influence the-political to make the-issues
al-qawālīyāt.
the-national.

(23) wa yastainū al-tajammūʿ quwatā-hu ḫaḍālika min al-ṣurūfī wa al-ṣurūrūtī
and take the-solidarity power-its also from the-circumstances and the-necessities
al-mauḍūʿiyāt (24) allātī jaʿalat qiyāsah-hu sarān maṣṭūman ḫūn ilmāʾātīn aw insīyāqīn
the-situational which made establishment-its matter inevitable without orders or drafting
warāʾa amārijāt laḥḍiyāh, (25) bi ḥāyta yusālūn al-qasalū anna-hu jāʾa (26) li
after strokes spontaneous, in way could the-saying that-it came to
yasūdī qarāgān (25) wa ḡam yāʾī ḥuswā min farāqū ʾiqlīmīyāt wa ʾiqlīmīqīn
fill emptiness and has not come is-it from emptiness. and is-it is considered
āydan istiqmālān li ḯaṭṭuṣūtī al-tajammūʿ al-ṣarabīy wa taṣāfānī-hī al-qāʾīlātī
too continuation to steps the-solidarity the-Arab and organization-its the-established
or the-mentioned, like council the-cooperation the-Gulf and project the-Moroccan the-large.

(26) kasmā anna-hu layya ṣawāqal tahsāsūyīn fī al-ītīrī al-ṣarabīy (29) wa lākīmā-hu
and is-it not framework competitive in the-framework the-Arab and but-it
maftūḥūn li al-īlīqīlī wa al-īndīnī min jānībi ʾatfīfātī ʾukrā. (30) wa
opened to the-meeting and the-join from side parties others, and
ḥuswā taʾkīdūn jādūd fīlāl ʾiqlīmīyīyītī al-taḥarrūkī al-ṣarabīy fī ʾatto al-ṣājīlāt,
is-it confirmation new on capability the-movement the-Arab in all the-fields,
(31) minā yuṭṭī ḡūrātān ṣaḥāl wa ṣīnāsīyīyītān akbir li ṣadā al-qudurūtī
from what give conditions better and authenticity large to extent the-capabilities
al-ṣarabīyāt ṣāla al-taḥāfūlī maṣrūtajaddātī al-ṣagrī wa ʾitṣārīfuṣī ṣaṣṣāqī al-mustaqbal.
the-Arab on the-interaction with innovations the-age, and explorations dimensions the-future.
Solidarity Meeting

(1) The presidents of the New Economic Council of Egypt, Jordan, Iraq, and North Yemen start their four-way discussions tomorrow in Amman. (2) The purpose of this meeting will be to define the organizational framework (3) and to agree on the preparations for the meeting (4) which is to be held in Baghdad at the end of this month.

(5) Despite the fact that this meeting is an economic landmark, (6) whose purpose is to achieve a greater degree of integration, (7) its establishment has necessarily been a political decision at a higher level. (8) The starting points of this meeting therefore express the need for reciprocal and cooperative work (9) controlled by the political will leading to joint profit in achieving the main strategic objectives.

(10) Undoubtedly, (11) this meeting is an expression of the people's aspiration for a better future, (12) at a time in when a large proportion of national problems has disappeared; (13) it is the new instrument dealing with the economic blocs in Europe and America; (14) it is also a new entry point for the expected development of peace in the region taking serious steps towards it (15) so as to be better prepared for dealing with life in what remains of this century and the beginning of the coming one.

(16) Moreover, these four countries, Egypt, Jordan, Iraq, and North Yemen, enjoy huge human, natural and industrial resources (17) affording great possibilities (18) to achieve multiple facets of integration and vital public investment. (19) This is in addition to national investments such as technological and military industries and the development of energy. (20) The purpose of these investments is to provide large monetary resources (21) to be used for increasing action programs and work opportunities. (22) This is also in addition to the possibilities for competition offered in the outside world for achieving better conditions of commercial exchange, improvement of payment scales, and efficiency and strength, within the political sphere, for national issues.

(23) This meeting derives its strength from the objectives derived from necessities and circumstances, (24) which made its establishment inevitable without obligations or drafting behind the pursuit of whims (25) in a way in which one can say that it comes (26) to fill a gap and (27) therefore, does not stem from nothing. (28) This meeting is also considered as a continuation of the steps taken already by the Arabs to come together in establishing organizations such as Greater Maghreb project and the Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC); (29) it is not a framework for competition within the Arab framework, (30) but an open framework for all other countries to join and meet; (31) It is a new confirmation of Arab ability to move forward in all fields (32) which gives a better image, indicative of these abilities and helps them to interact with the innovations of this century and the exploration of future dimensions.
مكاحفatu ال-جميلah

(1) qimmatu al-muṣâlaḥaṭat i wa al-wilâdah. qimmatu cawdati misr. qimmatu taṣlīyaṭī summit the-reconciliations and the-unity. summit return Egypt. summit purification

الساعات. لى غاري بدأ من al-mussaṣālat allatī utlīqaṭ alā ijtimaṭ-ṣati al-jāmil-sati the-climates. to other this from the-designations which named on meetings the-League

al-ṣarābiyyah fi al-dāri al-baydā', (2) wa kullu-hā yadduwa 'alā anna qimmata the-Arab in the-house the-white, and all-them indicate on that summit

al-jāmil-sah qad cawdat ijtimaṭ-ṣadi al-qaṣṣāṭi al-haṣqiyyah (3) allatī tu'ahhilu-hā li al-masāli the-League verify return gain the-bases the-real which qualify-it to the-action

الساعات السفلي al-mushafaṭ ir fi marhaライン maṣṭريyyah.

the-Arab the-fruitful in stages determinate.

(4) wa yuskinu an nūṭliqa tālā al-qimmati innan ṣumara rubbasta kāna akṭara and could to name on the-summit name another perhaps was more
dalālata wa ẓumālan, (5) bi ʿistībari anna cawdati misr fi ṣuḥdī ṣaṭī-hā kīnāt indication and inclusion, in considering that return Egypt in extent self-its was

الساعات al-mustaqirran tāṣamān, (6) wa huwa qimmatu al-muṣālaḥati wa al-muṣārafah. (7) wa matter ʿatīṣāmat complete, and is-it summit the-openness and the-frankness. and

qad taṣlīyaṭat al-ṣuḥd-dāri al-ṣaṣṣār alā ijtimaṭ-sat alah fi ṣuḥdī al-ṣaṭī-ri wa ṣaṣṣār atṭarafan ʿaṭīsāh min verily diversified the-meetings the-sides this the-framework and included parties several from

al-ṣuḥd-dāri al-ṣaṣṣār alā nāṣīn iṣṭaḥlāl al-haṣqiyyah fi al-ṣuḥd-hā al-nāṣijah wa fi the-leaders the-Arab on way made-it in beginning-its the-mature and in

kaṭūta-hā al-muṣāfaṭirah lūbba bi ʿṣabibatin faridatin ikṭassat bi-hā hādībi al-qimmatu ends-its the-direct similar in phenomenon unique specialized in-it this the-summit

379
bi al-ḥāṭ. (8) wa min al-māḥiyatī al-ḥālīshiyāh turaddu ḥājīhī al-liqā‘atu akbaru in the-self, and from the-side the-marginal regarded these the-meetings biggest

ma tabaqqāna min iḥjāzin, (9) idā inṭabar-nā bāb muqaddimatan tabṣāta ʿalā al-ʾiṯrān what achieved from achievement, if considered-ve-them prelude bring on on the-tranquility
al-ḥāqīqī bi al-nisbatī li sayrī al-munāqashāti wa min ṭammā ṣudūr al-ḥarām.
the-real in the-regard to progress the-discussion and from then issuing the-decisions.

(10) wa qad tamayyazat al-liqā‘atu al-miṣriyyatu bi sa‘irī al-ʾatrūfī al-marānīyyatī and verily were distinguished the-meetings the-Egyptian in all the-parties the-concerned

fi ṣāfir al-taṣāfī bi ḥādīthī al-munāṣarātī al-ḥākīmī fī taqāwulī al-marāqūtī in framework the-clearness In these the-practices the-wise in dealing the-subjects
al-ṭīhāshiyāh, (11) li’anna al-ra‘Ṭe saḥārīk yatabanni ḥājīthī al-siyāṣatā dhīman fī the-disputed, because the-president Muḥārak adopts this the-policy always in
nuṭalajatin li al-māʿūrī allāti tuḥimmu ʾṣābta miṣrī ḥālīliyyan wa ḥārīliyyan. tackling-his to the-matters which concern people Egypt inside and outside.

(12) wa al-wāqī‘u (13) anna wābdā‘a al-muṣārāḥatī fi al-taṣawwullu wa ḥāfītī al-ḥaḍāyī and the-principle the-frankness in the-dealing with all the-issues
al-ṭarābīyyatī yānbaqī (14) anna yakūna ṭayyīnā al-siyāṣatī al-rūmūti li al-dʿuṣallī al-ṭarābīyyatī the-Arab must to be the-policy the-general to the-countries the-Arab
fi ittiḥadīti-bā wa muḥāṣarātī-bā al-mustawmarib, (15) wa an yakūna mā ḥādata in communications-their and consultations-their the-continuous, and to be what happened

fi al-qimātī qudratū la-bā min bard, (16) id anna al-nakāṣatā fi in the-summit example to-it from after, because that the-openness in
ḥaddī ḍīti-bā biya al-salīlu al-wāḥīdī lī bīnīʿi al-mawqūfī al-muṭarākati qulūb extent self-its is the-means the-only to build the-stands the-joint on
usūsīn maṣūḥīyyatīn lī tuʿattiru ff-bā wuḥāsātū al-jurūfī aw ḍugūṭa al-ṣawī. bases objective not influence in-them accompanying the-circumstances or pressures the-reality.

(17) bāṭī al-muṣāwifī nafsū-bā, ʿawṣūna kānat ḥāqīqīyyatīn aw mutawawhasah, yuṣīnu bi even the-fears self-them, whether were real or imaginative, could in
al-muṣārāḥatī an tatbaḥaddād aw taqīlīn ṣidratū-bā aw taʿkūdā ẓaḥwānītī-bā al-ḥāfiyyah, the-frankness to disappear or becomes less sharpness-their or take guarantees-their the-enough,
(18) 

wa lā tuṣbihū cārāqīlla tanqasiru cālay-hā jubahū al-wifiq aw tataṣarrabū
and not become obstacles break on-them efforts the-agreement or sleep

min-hā tāqatu al-tamāli al-muṣṭarak. (19) faḍlān tān anna-bā iḏā wuriyat dūnā
from-them energy the-action the-joint. beside about that-they if (wuriyat) without

iṭlāqīn aw mukāḥafatīn (20) yuskinu an takbura wa tuʿādī ilā ṣawāhirā
absolute or uncovering could to become big and lead to phenomena

gayrī tābiyyatīn miṭlā al-kiyāmi wa al-tuzlūtī wa al-taṣfarrūd wa rubbāmī
not natural like the-conflict and the-isolation and the-division and perhaps

al-jumūḥī ilā ittiḥādi mawṣūfīna maṣgīyrūb, (21) ḫattā. wa in abā-bā al-maṣṭiq.
the-inclination to take positions contrastive, even and if refused-it the-logic.

(22) ḥādī ilā anna al-liqāʾīti māc wujūd al-rawāšība aw istiʿārārī wujūdī-hā
this to that the-meetings with existence the-residues or continuation existence-their

dūnā satyin ilā ʾikrājī-hā qad yakinqu zāhirūn lā yakīsun qaṣīqūta
without effort to taking out-them verily create appearance not reflect reality

al-bawwātīn, (23) wa min tāmā lā yakūnī faṭqālān aw muʾāṭtarīn.
the-inners, and from then not be effective or influential.

(24) wa lāsalla fī anṣīṭatīn sābiqīn lī al-tamāli al-tarabīy qaṣībīha
perhaps in activities previous to the-action the-arab proofs

calā dhīlik, (25) ḫāṭyū laam yakūn lī haḍī al-bayānīti al-muṣṭarakatī māzīju tāḏkar.
on this, as not be to some the-declarations the-joint results be mentioned.

(26) anna al-muṣūrāḥatū wa al-mukāḥafatū fa biya tuʿāḏǧūn kamm ṣabārat fī qīsātī
but the-frankness and the-openness then is-it promise as appeared in summit

al-jamīʿah bi cahīm jaḏīdim fī ḥādī al-tamāli (27) akṭara ṭiqātān wa
the-League in era new in this the-action more confidence and

miṣīḏqiyatīn wa abtātī calā al-ʾiḥṭirāmī wa al-jiddīyyat, wa akṭara taḥbīran
authenticity and inductive on the-respect and the-seriousness, and more expressive

(28) anna ṭarāhatī al-ʾawārīti al-tarabīyyatī, (29) wa min tāmā aqūdāra calā ḫābūrī
on movement the-streets the-arab, and from there able on manifesting.

al-ṣalāḥatī wa al-waḥdatī al-ḥaqīqīyyatī fī ṭabaṣmī al-ʾaqṣāyī wa ṭuṭḥabatī al-ḥaqūqī,
the-solidarity and the-unity the-real in adopting the-issues and follow up the-rights,
(29) ḥaṭṭu tūqībū al-zaqāhiru ẓaḥwā al-baṣṭiḥa, wa al-ṣafālū dāllata nīlā al-aqūl, 
then become the-appearances alertness the-inner sides, and the-deeds indicative on the-utterances

wa al-mumrāsatū min jinsī al-taktīẖ.
and the-practice from kind the-planning.

Openness of the Arab League

(1) Numerous designations can be given to the Arab Summit, that of conciliation, unity, return of Egypt, purification of the Arab ethos, and so on. (2) All these designations indicate the fact that the Arab League Summit has restored its real basis (3) enabling it to carry out its national duty at a self-determining and developmental stage. (4) One can perhaps give this summit a more expressive and conclusive designation, (5) because the return of Egypt to the Arab League was a settled matter. (6) This designation is in fact the summit of openness, truth and clarity. (7) Within this framework, there were multilateral meetings, including several Arab leaders, and these meetings were held in a way that made the summit’s constructive beginning and promising outcome unique. (8) From a peripheral point of view, these meetings achieved the best results ever, (9) if we consider them to be a preliminary stage, bringing real comfort in relation to previous meetings and decision makings. (10) With respect to all the countries in question, the Egyptian meetings were distinguished by being clear in dealing with all the disputed questions. (11) This is so as the Egyptian President, Husni Mubarak, always adopts this policy in dealing with matters that are important to the Egyptian public inside and outside Egypt. (12) In fact, (13) the principle of openness and clarity in dealing with all Arab issues (14) must be taken as the general policy for all mutual interactions and consultations of all Arab countries; (15) it must also be taken as an example for the Arabs to follow, (16) because the principle of openness or clarity is the only means of establishing joint perspectives based on objectivity, perspectives that cannot be influenced by current situations or other pressures. (17) Through this principle, even fears, whether real or imaginary, can be eliminated. (18) These fears, which diminish the actual effort, will not be obstacles anymore. (19) For if these fears were not diminished by the principle of openness, (20) they could turn into conflict, separation, isolation, and the adoption of conflicting positions, (21) even if openness and honesty are not accepted logically. (22) These meetings, with their rooted evil and bad intentions, would not help us in expressing what we really feel inside, (23) and therefore, they would become ineffective. (24) There are perhaps previous activities pointing to this, (25) since some of these joint declarations have not yielded tangible results. (26) However, through the principle of openness, (27) a new era of confidence and authenticity has emerged which is more in keeping with current Arab developments, (28) and more productive of real solidarity in dealing with all Arab issues. (29) As a result, appearances will be indicative of intentions, actions will be indicative of utterances, and practice will resemble planning.
(1) tawātirat al-anbū' mā'ākaran tān māfū-in sarīqiyin fī ṭawrī al-balwarati (2) li succeeded the-news lately about project American in stage the-visualisation to
daftū al-ḥarakati fi qaḍiyyati al-ʿarqā al-aṣṣat, (3) li yaqūma wāziʿu al-ḍārūliyyati push the-movement in issue the-east the-middle, to make minister the-foreign
Jorj bayker bi ṭarḥi-bi kīhūla liqū'ī al-ra-ṣāmati talā bānīsi tāṣīrī George Baker in present-it through meeting the-leaderships on margin burial
al-imbarātor al-yūnī al-rāḥil hirobītū, (4) wa qālika li istiṭtīrī al-raʿyi qablā the-emperor the-Japanese the-departed Hirobīthū, and that to explore the-opinion before
tawātī niṣūqī al-ittiqādāt (5) li bāṭi-bi rasmiyyan māṣ muṭtalāfī al-ṭārīf. expand range the-communications to investigate-it officially with various the-sides.

(6) wa aḥnānu tāṣīgīra lā-maṣīrū ʿumūrū nuḥīrat flī marḍalati-bi al-ibtidāʿiyah huwa ʿilmū ʿilmātū and most important elements the-project has published in stages-its the-preparatory is-it persuade
isrāʿīlā bi bidaʿi biwūrin māṣ tāṣīgīra filliṣṭiyyah mīn al-ṣaffātī wa Israel in begin discussion with elements Palestinian from the-West Bank and
gazzāh tāḥā bi taʿyūlī muṣawṣawmati al-taḥātīr wa tawṣīqu ṣallī irānī Gazzāh receive in support organisation the-liberation and agree on wake
al-bīyār, māṣ taʿjīlī ayīr liqūʿīn bayna al-masʿūlān al-islāmīyyin wa yūnū the-discussion, with put off any meeting between the-responsibles the-Israeli and Yasir

(8) wa bī gaddī al-nazārī tān tabīʿatī al-maṣīrū nafs-īh, (9) fa inna-hu and in ignore the-sight about nature the-project self-its, then that-it
yabdū ʿilāna ʿan raḥbatī al-ḥokūmati al-maṣīrūl yāqūtī al-jadīdāh flī al-muṣarākati seems "declaration" about desire the-government the-American the-new in the-participation

383

(13) wa nulḥū bi mašīyin min taṣābbītā bayker nafsi-bū ḥiṣā-bu "alā ỉhythm al-dawāri al-masā'ikīy and we notice from declarations Baker self-him concern-his on revive the-role the-American bi mašīyin min al-muṣāb̄arātā atal-ṣarāfū "alā maḥfīma al-ṣūlīn ʾubbhata in more from the-follow ups and the-presentations on way deny about Washington suspicion taḥallūt-bū "an al-istikji̇bātī bi fāsīlīyyatin li al-mustajaddūtī al-kēşṣatī bi al-qad'iyah, aw ʾubbhata abandoning-its about the-response in effectiveness to the-new the-special in the-matter, or suspicion inbašīzī-bū li al-jāmi'ī al-islāmīyyī fi muṣījahta ayirī taṣawwurātā ṭūbīyyah, (14) fa qad bias-its to-the-side the-Israeli in confronting any developments positive, fa verily ʾālāma (15) anā-bū law qaddama hādīki al-afkara fi ʾīlān li wusārāli karijiyyatī declared that-he if presented these the-ideas indeed to ministers foreign al-majūsītā al-orobīyyah kīllā ziyyūrati-bī al-ṣulātī bi al-dawāri ḥilfī al-ṣulāntī, (16) ḥarūr̄ the-community the-European through visit-his the-last to countries pact the-Atlantic, where daṣ̄-hum liār al-taṣābūtu ʾi ayiri ṭājarrūkūn ḫāṣ̄īn bi-him wa ṣādān invited-them to the-tarry in any move special in-them and not taqḍīmī muḥbūdūtina jadīdā, (17) qabla an yṣalāqiya bi al-raʿīsī muḥbūrāk fi submit initiative new, before to meet-he in the-President Mubarak in ziyyūrati-bī naṣa al-duktor ʾismāt ʿabdi al-majīd li ṭūbūntī ṣuṣma istiqābīl-bī visit-his with the-doctor Ismat Abd Al-Majid to Washington then reception-his li isbāq ṣūmair hādī ǧalā. to Ishaq Shamir after that.
wa laa yakun al-tarjilu bi tarihi al-afkari al-amrkiyyah taruqan ff-maa and has not be the-acceleration in presenting the-ideas the-american obstacle in-what yabdii li al-jubudi al-orobiyyah, (19) bal raddan muhabbaran cala waa carajahu wuzaru'u seem to the-european response direct on what expose ministers al-kurriyyatin cala ba'ter min nat'ija muqajiyyah ta'awqalat ilay-ha al-lajatu the-foreign on Baker from results encouraging reached to-the committee al-tulsiyyah fi jumlati-ba al-akhaib bi al-manjihin, (20) al-arau alladi intahaw the-tripartite in tour-its the-last in the-area, the-matter which added-they min-bu cala heed qawli wa'iri Kurriyyatin Holland (21) lii anna al-waqta gud from-it on limit saying minister foreign Holland to that-the time verify kii (22) li al-qiyami bi mubdaratin jadaib (23) tu'add'il lii infirjiin baqiliiyan come to the-making in initiative new lead to explosion real fi al-musqif. (24) wa huda ya'akbidu anna amrka tarii min baqii-ba ann tabda'a biya bi in-the-stand, and this confirm that America see from right-its to start it in al-mubdaratin (25) li taddali-ba al-ha fi al-musikibah, (26) lakiina-ba lataxala the-initiative to involvement-its the-special in the-problems, but-it not still tatarasadu furaa al-lijmi'i bi al-arrajfi. (27) wa qad yajidu al-wa'strna al-amrikii look out in the-meeting in-the-parties. and verily find the-minister the-american forstan tu'ayyidu musqita-bu ff-ama fi ilabahu bihi wuzar'ai al-kurriyyati al-orobiyyuna opportunity support stand-his in-what demanded in-it ministers the-foreign the-europeans min darurati qiyisi-bi buwa makiliyan bi siyaraatin li al-wajtiqah fi asra'i nathin makin from necessity pay-bis him personally in visit to the-area in quickest time possible kasaa fasala-bu salafu-bu solts. as did-he former-his Schultz.

(28) anna 'an fasaa al-marzi fa inna-bu min al-aubbiqu li awaani bahut-bu but about aim the-project then that-it from-the-previous to time-its investigating-it bi al-ta'bi (29) li anna-bu lam yatinma batda waqta-bi fi al-qayiti al-niiba'iyya, (30) wa in-the-nature to that-it has not complete yet putting-it in the-form the-final, and lakiina al-lijaba al-i'amali cala saqdi al-mu'tamari al-dawliyy wa surata ijri'i but the-persistence the-worldly on hold the-conference the-international and speed making
There have been intermittent reports recently about the preliminary stages of an American project to activate the peace process in the Middle East so that the American Secretary of State, George Baker, will be able to present this project during his meeting with Arab leaders on the occasion of the funeral of the deceased Japanese emperor, Hirohito, and to investigate the general opinion before officially extending the domain of discussion with the parties concerned.

The most important elements of this project, as published in its preliminary stage, is persuading Israel to start negotiations with Palestinian groups from the West Bank and Gaza strip, accepted by the PLO, and put off any kind of meeting between the Israeli leaders and PLO Chairman, Yasir Arafat, in the international peace conference, till these negotiations take place.

Regardless of the nature of this project, it seems evident that the new American administration wants to participate early in these suggested negotiations to resolve the Palestinian problem. This comes within the framework of a 'race' within the international arena between several external parties who have great influence to effectively prove their involvement in the international movement. This can be done in such a way that absence from participation becomes a loss for the parties concerned.

One can notice, from Baker's declaration his endeavor to revive the American role with the increase of rejoinders and discussions in a way that disregards its abandonment of any intentions to effectively respond towards the new issues current within the Palestinian cause, and its bias toward Israel. Mr. Baker announced that he had presented these ideas to the foreign ministers of the European community during his last visit to NATO; he also called upon them to be careful in making any specific moves or in presenting any new initiatives before he meets the Egyptian president, Hosni Mubarak, and then Ishak Shamir.

The 'speeding up' of the presentation of these American ideas has not hindered the European efforts, but it came as a direct response to what the American Foreign Minister, George Baker, put forward as encouraging consequences reached by the tripartite committee in its final tour to the region. This, as the Dutch Foreign Minister said, implies that the time has come to present a new peace initiative, which will lead to real flexibility in this stand; confirming that America recognizes its right to start this initiative because of its specific involvement in it, but still wanting eagerly to meet the parties concerned. It may well be the case that the American Foreign Minister finds the opportunity to support him, particularly after he has been asked to visit the region as soon as possible as his former colleague, George Schultz, did.

However, as far as the main objectives of this project are concerned, it is too early for discussion, because this project has not been put in its final form. Meanwhile, the international insistence on holding the international conference, as quickly as possible, may make it preferable to make the internal Palestinian-Israeli discussion brief and then inform the PLO of them as long as all the different organizations of the Palestinian people within the territories agree to them.
masārīku al-ṣiyyah...wa ʿātārū al-ṣkarīn
battles the-shiites...and greediness the-others

(1) wa alladī turīdhu millīyātī al-ṣiyyatī al-muṣtaṣīrīṭa fi lubnān min istirārī what which want militiās the-shiites the-conflicting in Lebanon from continuing
bēdīhī al-maṣūrīkī gayrī al-mafhumātī allatī tuḥaddidū bi ittiṣārī miṣḥī al-ḥarbī these the-battles not the-understood which threaten-they in expansion scale the-war
al-shāliyātī al-lubnānīyātī marāratī ḫurān? (2) ḫal yuṣāqīn an yuṣaddīqah ʿaḥādun anna the-civil the-Lebanese once another? would could to believe one that
bēdīhī al-muṣūrūnūtī taṣāriḍu ʿan muṣūrūnūna lubnānīyīna yurīdūn al-ḥarīrī li mutamīn-hīn? these the-practices come about citizens Lebanese want-they the-good to know-their?
(3) inna bēdīhī al-maṣūrīkī tajīrī ṭaКурсīn li ṭūqīrī al-ṭamālātī wa ʿadamī that these the-battles come confirmation to reality the-agentness and not
al-ṭamlīrī min ʿanābīrī bēdīhī al-millīyātī li maṣlahātī durūlān ʿanābilyātīn li the-belonging from side these the-militias to sakes countries foreign not
turīdhu li bēdī al-balādī ʿan yastarīḥīda ʿāfīyātāhu wa ʿan yuṣqqīqa want-they to this the-country to restore well-being and to achieve
Istiqār-ah?
independence-its?
(4) bēdīhī kullu-hī ʿaqībatun fasādat nafsa-hā baʿda mīsilātī al-maṣūrīkī al-ṣarīsah these all-them questions imposed selves-them after series the-battles the-vicious
allatī dārat ṭillāla al-ṣayyīmi al-maṣīyāh bayna millīyātī al-ṣiyyatī al-muṣūlīnīa li which broke out during the-days the-past between militiās the-Shiites the-loyal to
Trān (5) wa al-laḡī-nā yuṭīqūnūn ʿala ʿanfūsī-hūm issa ʿḥizbu allahâ wa Iran and the-which-they call-they on selves-them name 'party God' and
millīyūṭī al-ṣiyyatī al-muṣūlīnīa līṣūrīyīn (6) wa al-laḡīnū yuṭīqūnūn ʿala ʿanfūsī-hūm militiās the-Shiites the-loyal to Syria and the-which call-they on selves-them

387
image 'harakat Amal' (7) min a'lli al-is'tila'i 'al-a'd al-amlih fi al-janubiyyati li bayrut.

Bayrut.

(8) inna haddi al-masirika tas'isu wa jida mukattatatina habtin (9) yastahdi-fu ana emphatic these the-battles reflect existence plan ' wicked aim-it security wa salama wa istigrafa luban (10) wa takhsu madu tugyuni al-maslihi and peace and stability Lebanon and discover scale tyranny the-interests al-izlahiyati li kull min dimagha wa 'ahrain (11) hath law adda' the-regional to every from Damascus and Tehran even if cause al-su'a ila burusi tamqyun 'amtin bayna-busur lina yattafigu wa kull the-matter to emergence contradiction deep between-them not agree and all maslihi al-tanqi al-mutaraki bayna-busur fi asrahi ahdufi al-targ al-awsat bi appearances the-harmony the-joint between-them in theater incidents the-East the-middle in faklim sama wa al-asrahi al-lubnaniy 'alaf wajhi al-kugush form general and the-theater the-Lebanese on face the-satisfaction.

(12) wa fi istigadi-ca (13) anna hadhih al-tatawwurati al-mu'sifah yanbagu an takuna and in belief-we that these the-developments the-regrettable must to be bi mansilati jarari indara (14) yugidu al-tanparya al-wa'athalyata al-lubna'liyyata in status bell warning awake the-groups the-national the-Lebanese al-tariq (15) likay tatahraka duna ibta' (16) min a'lli darbi hadhi al-mukattati al-jahannamiy the-honest to be move without delay from sake hitting this the-plan the-relish al-adh yastahdifu tabiila luban na qunbalatin mazqatatin da'amati al-infjar fi al-sulami which aims turning Lebanon to bomb set lasting the-explosion in the-world al-carabiyya yu'ad al-ssuyu al-mustani li infjarati-ba al-nuwasiliyya ilaa lafti al-angle the-Arab perform the-echo the-continuous to explosions-their the-successive to draw the-attention bas'idan sama tuqattitu la-hu kullmin min dimagha wa 'ahrain gidha al-maslihi al-qaswaliyyati for away from what plan-they to-it each from Damascus and Tehran against the-interests the-national al-tulya li al-umati al-carabiyyah.

the-high to the-nation the-Arab.
(17) إننا أهدان ل... سنة ياستاترها ان ينكرا (18) أننا مليشيا أمال المساهمة في المساندة التي لم نكد نتحدث به.

(19) إنها حزب الله، ويستند الحزب إلى التحالف مع القوات المساعدة من الخارج للعلاج وللإدارة.

(20) هي من🐾 باردين في لبنان على义 - ابراهيم الحازمي - الغزاة السنيكية - الأسرى الصادقين - بعد أن كانوا يقتلون في لبنان.

(21) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(22) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(23) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(24) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(25) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(26) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(27) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(28) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(29) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(30) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(31) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.

(32) إنها تحاول تطوير الهيكلية الجديدة، وهو ما يُعتبر ضروريًا لمواجهة التهديدات الخارجية في لبنان.
(1) What do the conflicting Shiite Militias in Lebanon want from continuing these non-sensical battles which are once more threatening the spread of Lebanese civil war? (2) Would anyone believe that these activities come from Lebanese citizens, wanting the best for their country? (3) These battles come as confirmation of the truth that they are agents of foreign countries which do not want this country to restore its well being and establish its stability.

(4) All these questions need answering after a series of vicious fights which broke out during the last few days between the Militias, loyal to Iran, (5) who call themselves ‘Hizbullah’, and the Militias, loyal to Syria, (6) who call themselves ‘harakatu hal’, (7) aimed at capturing the southern suburbs of Beirut.

(8) It should be emphasized that these fights reflect the existence of a vicious plan, (9) aimed at undermining the well being and stability of Lebanon; (10) they also reflect the tyranny of the regional interests for both Damascus and Tehran, even if they lead to a profound conflict which does not conform with their joint coordination in the sphere of Middle Eastern events in general and Lebanon in particular.

(12) We believe (13) that these regrettable developments must be taken as a warning; (14) they should also awaken the honest national Lebanese parties, (15) to move ahead and (16) destroy this internal plot whose main aim is to turn Lebanon into a time bomb within the Arab world in such a way that it distracts people’s attention from what Damascus and Tehran are planning against the national interests of the Arab nation.

(17) One cannot deny the fact (18) that just as the Amal Militias, which are loyal to Syria represent a dagger head (19) so too the Militias of ‘Hizbullah’ represent a dagger head for Iran. (20) Both of them work for their masters outside Lebanon; (21) they also distort the image of the national resistance in the south against the Israeli presence (22) through kidnapping operations in Beirut and in other Lebanese cities of foreign citizens under the cover of chaos (23) imposed by these Militias.

(24) If the Amal Militias are working at consolidating the Syrian presence in Lebanon (25) in order to carry out the annexation project and achieve the dream of a ‘Greater Syria’, (26) then, the Militias of the ‘party of God’ are working at a more dangerous project (27) because they are working at turning Lebanon into an Iranian protectorate which can be used as an advanced base (28) to attack the Arab nations from within.

(29) Accordingly, these agent militias contribute knowingly or unknowingly in the preparation of Lebanon (30) as an easy prey for greedy people. (31) It should be known (32) that Israel has not yet renounced its ambitions in Lebanon, (33) and it still occupies a bridge called the ‘security zone’ in the south. (34) When will the fighters ever wake up from their coma. (35) This is the question.
idēnāt
condemnations

(1) alārān swradatu al-kāfrijyiyyatu al-azmīkyyatu fi bayānī-hā al-sana'iyyan fī-huqqi lately mentioned the-foreign the-American in statement-its the-annual about rights
al-insāna ḥamlī al-tālāma isma isrā'īli bi waṣfi-hā mutahikatan li bāḏīhi al-'uqūq the-human around the-world name Israel in description-its abusing to these the-rights
fi al-ʿarāḍī al-muṭṭallab, (2) wa huwa ṣamalun maḥmūd fī mustahallī cahdi in the-lands the-occupied, and is-it action praise-worthy in beginning era
al-raʾīs bū (3) yuʿazīṣu al-tiqata fī iṣmāniyyati takfū al-nagrati al-azmīkyyati the-president Bush strengthens the-confidence in capabilities balance the-look the-American
lī al-šabīṭī al-jāfriyyah.
to the-events the-current.

(4) wa midān yuʿakkīdū aḥāmiyyata al-taqrlīr anna-hu ṣaḍara fī and what confirms importance the-report is-it issued in
ṣaqqābi al-ittihāmati allati wāradat fī taqrīrī al-lijāni al-azmīkyyah al-mudīfī-hāh ends the-accusations which came in report the-committee the-American the-defendant
fī ḥuqqi al-insān, (5) wa waṣjāhah-hā illā ḥukmatī al-raʾīsī al-sābīq raygān (6) bi about rights the-human, and addressed-they to government the-president the-former Reagan in
anna-hā nādiran mā qaṣmat bi idānāti intilhākātī ḥuqqī al-insān fī that-it rarely not stood up in conviction abuses rights the-human in
al-duwāli al-sābīqah fī muqašībi idānātī-hā al-mutakarrirah li bāḏīhi al-intilhākāt fī the-countries the-friendly in in return condemnation-its the-repeated to these the-abuses in
al-duwāli al-miṣīrīyyah, (7) wa ḱagša al-taqrlīru bāḏīhi al-lijān bi al-dīkrī fī-adana the-countries the-socialists, and specified the-report these the-committees in the-mention not
idānātī al-intilhākātī allati tartakībāh isrāʾīli ǧidda al-filistīniyyīna fī al-ʿarāḍī condemnation the-abuses which commit Israel against the-Palestinians in the-lands
(15) wa yatta'ifu ilānū ḥāda al-taqīrTr maṣṣūdūrū baṣūnīn rasūlīm 'an al-intifādah
and agree declaration this the-report with issuance statement official about the-uprising
a-lana-hu lishūq rābīn wahṣīru al-dīfā-, (16) wa yatta'awānu bi dawri-hi ḳhā'iyīyīnīn lā
announced-he lehab Rābi'n minister the-defence, and contain in turn-its statistics not
ru'ūn(17) ādu qārinat bi al-taqīrTrī al-asrākkīy (18) illā intībā'é-hā intīrīfān gārībān bi
could if compared in the-report the-american if regarded-the recognition clear in
intīhāk ḳuṭūqī al-insān. (19) fa qād a-lana rūbīn (20) anna muḥāṣṣīlata ḡaṣāyīn
abuse rights the-human, for verily declared-he Rābi'n that outcome victims
al-intifādah (21) allātĪ akmalat šābra-hā al-rābīta tā'ā rū (20) biya 360 qāfīlān wa 7 ʿalāfū
the-uprising which completed month-its the-four tenth are 360 killed and 7 thousand
jarīm (faṣqīṭā) bi al-īdūfītī lā 22 alīf 'wan muṭaqqāl ufrija 'an baṣīl-bīm!
injured (only!) in the-addition to 22 thousand arrested freed about some-them!
(22) wa qūl (23) anna 60 bi al-miʿāth min al-muṭṣāhirīn allāqīnā ṣaqqīf-ūnā
and said-he that 60 in the-hundred from the-demonstrators who-they throw-they
al-ṣāhīr. (22) hum ṣin al-ṣāfīlī bāyān 6 sān awūtīn wa 14 sānāh
the-stones are they from the-children between 6 years and 14 year!
(24) wa rūbīn ṭabā-an huwa ṣāḥībū siyāsī al-taqīrTrī al-mutajaddīd gidda al-intifādah,
and Rābi'n of course is owner policy the-escalation the-renewed against the-uprising,
(25) wa huwa allātī a-lana ṣuʿākarkan 'an aswāfī qasīn jādīdā tāsīmīdū ṣalā al-tawassuʿī
and is-he who declared-he lately about methods suppression new depend on the-expansion
fi istikdāmu al-raṣāṣīli al-blūstīkyyati al-fattākāh, (26) wa muṭṣāraudī al-junūdī li al-sibīyīn
in use the-bullets the-plastic the-deadly, and chase the-soldiers to the-boys
bi-bā (27) ḥattā ʾlqīrī dūr-him, (28) wa taqīqī ṣuqūbūtītī jāmīʿīyytīn tālā ṭārīh-him
in-them till back houses-their and sign penalties collective on parents-their
bi nasīfī manāṣīllī-him wa gāqīl-hā wa ṣaqqīl garīmātīn būḥīdātīn tālāy-him.
in destroying houses-their and closing-them and impose fines expensive on-the.
(29) kanī kāna qād a-lana fi ṣūlīka al-Bīn (30) anna al-jayāfa ṣtqālā
and was verily announced-he in that the-time that the-army arrested
(29) alif ṣīlisīnīyil ḳiṣūla al-intifādah baqīyā min-hum fi al-ḥājja 5600 faṣlān
thousand Palestinian during the-uprising remained from-them in the-detention 5600 in addition
about 4 thousands other arrested before breakout the-uprising!

(32) wa bi alsinati-him yudinna anfusah-hum bi intifaki. huqqi al-lOS
and in tongues-their condemn-they selves-them in abusing rights the-human!}

Condemnations

(1) The American Department of Ministry of Foreign Affairs recently mentioned Israel, in its annual report, as a country which abuses human rights in the occupied territories. (2) This sort of action is praiseworthy at the beginning of President Bush’s era, (3) because it strengthens confidence in the balancing of American views on current events.

(4) The important thing about this report is that it comes in the wake of accusations by the American council for the Protection of Human Rights, (5) which has addressed accusations to President Reagan’s former government. (6) The report states that this government has rarely condemned an allied country as much as it has condemned communist countries. (7) The report also makes special mention of the lack of condemnation of the sort of action Israel carries out against the Palestinians in the occupied territories.

(8) In the report, the American condemnation is focused on the unjustifiable methods employed by Israel to confront the uprising and the stone-throwing demonstrations mounted; (9) these methods not only involve the excessive use of force, plastic bullets, torturing arrested people, destroying and sealing up houses, (10) but also the various crude regulations directed against citizens, Israelis and Palestinians in specific cases. (11) The report also quotes specific statistics including the killing of 336 Palestinians, the injuring of another twenty thousand, the destruction of 154 homes and the bricking up of hundreds of others purely on grounds of suspicion. (12) The report also demands that Israel should abandon these iniquitous methods (13) which do not conform to current standards (14) since they are considered a violation of Palestinian human rights.

(15) The announcement of this report conforms with an official declaration, made by the Israeli Defence Minister, Ishaq Rabin, concerning the uprising. (16) This declaration contains statistics which, (17) if compared with the American report, (18) are a clear confession of Israel’s violation of human rights. (19) Rabin announced (20) that the uprising (21) which is now in its fourteenth month, (20) has resulted in the killing of 360 people, the injuring of seven thousand and the arresting of twenty-two thousand some of whom have been released. (22) Rabin also said (23) that 60% of the demonstrators, who threw stones, (22) were children between the ages of 6 and 14.

(24) It is of course Rabin who was the originator of the policy of the reescalation of the uprising; (25) he was also the one who announced new methods of oppression relying on the increased use of plastic bullets, (26) the pursuit of children by soldiers (27) even into to their homes, (28) the imposition of collective punishments of their parents, including the sealing and blowing up of houses, and imposing large fines on them.

(29) Rabin also announced (30) that the Israeli army has arrested 29 thousand Palestinians during the uprising of whom 5600 were still in detention, in addition to another 4 thousand arrested (31) before the outbreak of the uprising.

(32) By their own words they have condemned themselves for violating human rights!

394
al-urdunn... ala'al-tahd
the-Jordan... on the-promise

(1) fi baddi'i al-ḥusayn alladi bṣattu al-ḥālāt al-biriṭāniyyah, ṣīrān, akkada
in speech the-Hussein which transmit-it the-radio station the-British lately confirmed-he

jalālātuhu (2) calā anna al-calāqīt al-urdūnīyya al-filiṣṭīnīyyah mumayyazah (3) wa kūṣṭān
Majesty-his on that the-relations the-Jordanian the-Palestinian special and particularly

wa anna al-urdūnna fi jāme al-aḥwāl lam yataqallā can abnā'ī fīlīṣṭīn
and that the-Jordan in all the-circumstances did not abandon about children palestine

(4) wa lam yataqallā canhum, wa can wājibī-hi nāḥya-hum, (5) ilā am
and will not abandon about-them, or about duty-its towards-them, till an

ystaṣīdī̄ tī ḫugūqa-hum al-kāmilah, calā turībī-hi al-watāniyyah, (6) wa jā'a bāḏ al-baadīk
restore-they rights-their the-complete, and particularly

al-tawāīl. (9) wa difā'can wāma ʿīyati-hā, (10) wa dāwātan li al-jamīr al-ṣālīmiyy, the-second and defence about legitimacy-its, and call to the-conscience the-world,

(11) li yutarījma taṣṣufu-hu maṣa-hā, ilā tamālin yuṣajjihu ṣagda al-muṭamārī al-dālīliyy
to translate sympathy-its with-it, to action hurry hold the-conference the-international

al-qābīl. (17) wa kāna jalālātuhu, qad wajīha al-taṣfīra ḍāta-hu, the-peace the-world, and was majesty-his, just address the-warning self-it,

gayra marratīn ḫīlīla al-aḥbābī allātī afād bi-hā. min qabīl ilā ṣadādīm
not only once during the-speeches which gave in-them, from before to number

min al-ṣuḥūfī wa al-ḥālātī wa ḫubābītī al-tiṣfīyah al-ṣālīmiyyah...
from the-papers and the-broadcast cooperations and networks the-television the-world...
(18) wa ganiyyun tan al-qawl, (19) anna hâja kulluh huwa tafridun li al-iltilzâmi and needless about the-say, that this all is embodiment to the-commitment al-qawwâl al-ladâ yatanassaku bi-hi al-urdun.. wa alladâ ya’kudu madâ-hu min the-national which hold in-it the-Jordan.. and which take dimension-its from kulli hâja tanqiyati al-ejmâ’i al-arabiyyah, wa al-emâl al-jâd al-akhir hâja during purifying the-climates the-Arab, and the-action the-serious on assemble al-`aqqâti al-carabiyyah.. (20) wa qad tabaddâ hâja al-emâl angâha mâ yakunu the-resources the-Arab.. and verify manifest this the-action clearest we is fi al-masâf alladâ yaqunu bi-hi jallatu-hu (21) li isqadati kiyânin carabiyyin yaqunu in the-endeavour which makes in-it majesty-his to establish entity Arab include al-duwala al-carabiyyah al-qâri’i al-bahri al-abrá al-mutasâsî`i (22) wa alladâ min the-states the-Arab eastern the-sea the-white the-middle and which from kâmi-hi an yahdâta al-jabhat al-Qâriyyah (23) wa yutâha li al-carab an yumarisu al-kayârât sake-its to send the-front the-eastern and allow to the-Arab to exercise the-choices al-munâsibah (24) li istiqâdatî `ibqâqi-him (25) wa ira’i al-salâm al-`adili wa the-suitable to restore rights-their and establish the-peace the-just and al-`adili fi wintaqati-him. the-comprehensive in region-their.

(26) wa hâdâ, yadlulu al-taylîn al-`intifadah alladâ yaquni dâdah al-qâriyya, and so, enters the-support to the-uprising which exercise the-Hussein, jawran jadîdan, yatanâsâlî fi ta’lîli al-qawwâti al-`adiliyyah al-carabiyyah, stage new, represented in qualify the-power the-self the-Arab, (27) li takûna al-sâhîra, alladâ yutâ’i-bâ dâ’man, dâ faqrü jadîd..(28) wa bi in order to be the-backer, which give-it support, which hawâim new.. and in dâlilka yakunu al-`usâya, qad abdâ al-`intifâdatâ (29) wa hiya tadâkulu `amâbah so be the-Hussein, emph. gave the-uprising and in-it enter year-its al-`yârî (28) jukdan muhayrâzat fî hâja al-`ittijâh.. the-second effort special in this the-direction..

(30) laqad hâna al-vâqit, (31) li yagduwa al-ta’lîdî al-carabiyy li al-`intifâdah calâ emphatic come the-time, to become the-support the-Arab to the-uprising on al-mustawa al-jadîdi al-masâ`id.. (32) wa huwa al-mustawa alladâ yahribu al-urdunnu the-level the-new the-wanted.. and this the-level which covet eagerly the-Jordan.
Jordan .... Keeps its Promise

(1) In his recent speech broadcast by the B.B.C., his Majesty King Hussein of Jordan affirmed (2) that Jordanian-Palestinian relations are very special (3) since Jordan has not abandoned (4) and will not abandon the Palestinian people (5) until they are granted their full rights on their own national territory. (6) The king's speech came as (7) an expression of Jordan continuing support for the uprising (8) which is entering its second year, (9) a defence for its legitimacy (10) and a call to the conscience of the international community (11) to translate its sympathy with the uprising into urgent action (12) to convene an international conference that leads to a genuine solution and the restoration of peace and stability in the region.

(13) King Hussein took the opportunity (14) to repeat his warning once again (15) that the ongoing conflict does not just threaten the region alone (16) but that it threatens the whole world. (17) King Hussein has given this same warning repeatedly on previous occasions to a number of international newspapers, radio stations, and TV networks.

(18) Needless to say, (19) all this underlies Jordan's steadfast commitment to the Arab nations, whose goal is to clear the air in the Arab world, and to take serious steps to mobilize Arab resources. (20) This is demonstrated with the utmost clarity by the king's endeavour (21) to establish an Arab entity comprising the East Mediterranean Arab countries (22) with the aim of reviving the eastern front (23) and providing Arabs with the appropriate choices (24) to restore their rights (25) and to establish a just and comprehensive peace in the region.

(26) Accordingly, King Hussein's support for the uprising has entered a new phase (27) which gives new import to autonomous Arab power. (28) In doing so, King Hussein has given the uprising, (29) which is now entering its second year, (30) a significant boost.

(30) The time now has come for the Arabs (31) to increase their level of support for the uprising Jordan is working to achieve, (32) and to bring about a situation in the Arab world which will make it possible (33) to confront the challenges in the way of establishing the national entity which King Hussein is calling for.

(34) Jordan, (35) which has been a bastion of resistance continues to be so; (34) it has chosen, as usual, to take the lead in developing Arab capabilities, (36) and in doing so, it has transcended mere sentiment and has made a genuine and practical contribution to the Arab cause.
(1) ta’tī munūqṣātu majlis al-sani al-dawli li isqāṭi al-ṭā’irat.

come discussion council the-security the-international to shooting down the-areoplane

al-Ṭrānīyyah fursatan ukrā likay qaṣfā al-ṣāliṣu maṣa wa’sūliyyāthi wa ilṭīṣāmāthi the-Iranian chance another to stand the-council with responsibilities and commitments

wa al-shadīfi al-ṣaṣqīyyati allatī kānat warā’a isā’i hay’ati al-usami and the-aims the-real which were behind establishment organization the-nations

al-muttaḥidati kullihā. (2) fa idā kāna isqāṭu al-wilayṭī al-muttaḥidati li ṭā’irat the-united all. then if was shooting down the-States the-Unite to areoplane

madaniyyatin jarīmatan tastaḥḥalqu al-tamādīda wa al-īdānāh, (3) fa inna ma yajibu an civil crime deserve the-condemnation and the-criticisi, then inna what must to

yuṣāru ilay-hi wa yu’ākkadu lay-hi busa anna al-niṣṣama al-Ṭrānīyy ashāna be pointed to-it and be confined on-it is-it that the-regime the-Iranian contribute fi silsilati muṣāraṣāthi, wa fi ṣulūfihi wa ṣinnālī-hi, wa fi irṣārī-hi in series exercises, and in swaggering and obstinacy-its, and in persistence-its

cala’ istimārī al-ḥarb fi al-tambīdī li jarīmati isqāti al-ṭā’irah, wa li on continuing the-war in the-preparation to crime shooting down the-areoplane, and to

waqūyi ṣaḥarīṭi al-jarīama al-maṣ̄īṭlah, (4) wa yakfī an nūzira buna illā occurrences tens the-crimes the-similar, and suffices to we-point here to ma’ṣṣīti nakhata fi muṣīmi al-ḥajj al-mādī wa illā sawaliyyāti al-qatil tragedy Mecca in season the-Hajj the-last and to operations the-killings

al-mustammarah li al-arṣa al-cīrāqīya in illā daṣf al-aṣḥāf the-continuous to the-war-prisoners the-Iraqi and to push thousands the-children

illā sāḥṣi al-arṣat fi ḥarbīn (5) aṣqallu ma yuṣūla bihi to field the-death in war smaller what could to be described in-it anna-hā maṣ̄ūnūṭan wa fāsīdah. that-it mad and corrupt.

(6) inna mas‘ūliyyata majlis al-sani al-dawli an īḥa qaṣfā cinda jarīmati isqāti emphatic responsibility council the-security the-international is not stand about crime shooting down al-ṭā’irah (7) wa an yuqṣīma waqṭa-hu wa munūqṣāti-hi laḥī, (8) ba’il an yansūra ilay-hi the-areoplane and to specify time-its and discussion-its to-it, but to look to-it.
wa yatanâala-hā bi al-hâbīti min ṣârīku kauzu-hā juzʿan min hâdīhi al-ḥarbi al-mustamirratī
and deal-it in the-discussion from where being-it part from this the-war the-continuous

hayna al-ṭirāqī wa Irān, (9) wa an yanṣura ilay-hā wa yatanâala-hā aydān min
between the-Iraq and Iran, and to look to-it and deal-it too from

maqīfī al-ṭirāq (10) allâdī yauwūda yada-hu li al-salāmī wa al-istiqrār wa
stand the-Iraq which extend band-its to the-peace and the-stability and

stand the-regime the-Iranian, the-refused to this the-peace and this the-stability.

(11) wa ʾidā kunnā mata ḍīnātī al-ṣarāfi al-ṣamarākīyyah (12) bi īltībār-ha ṣamalân
and if were with condemnation the-criminal the-American in consideration-its act

maqīfīn (13) wa mata al-ṭandīdī bi tawjīhī al-sawārīk al-ṣamarākīyyah ilā tāʾiratīn
decision and with the-condemnation in directing the-missiles the-American to aeroplane

madānîyyah, (14) fa innân mata ḍarūratī an takūna al-munūsabatu furqataman amâna
then, are-we with necessity to be the-occasion chance in front

mâjjlis al-amān li mutābâratī ṣarârīhi raqām 598 wa al-mutsâllīqi bi
council the-security to follow up resolution number 598 and the-regarding in

al-ḥarbi al-ṭirāqīyyah al-Ṭrānīyyah, (15) fa ḥâdâ al-qarārū yanṣūruṣ gurâhātan (16) al-lā
the-war the-Iraqi the-Iranian, as this the-resolution defines frankly on

inzâlī al-ṣaqūbūtī bi al-ṭarāfī al-râfîdī li waqīfī al-ḥarb, (17) wa ʾalā fardo
impose the-punishment in the-party the-refused to stop the-war, and on impose

al-ḥiṣbī al-tasalīhyī al-lā ṣaqqāhū bihi
the-regime the-Iranian, the-accepted this to the-peace and the-stability and on impose

al-ḥarbi al-ṭirāqīyyah al-Ṭrānīyyah, (15) fa ḥâdâ al-qarârū yanṣūruṣ gurâhātan (16)
the-war the-Iraqi the-Iranian, as this the-resolution defines frankly on

al-ṣalâhī bi al-ṭarāfī taṣrīḥī wa al-ṭarāfī al-qarârū wa ṣindā maqtâî-hi min īstâmārī al-ḥarb
impose the-blocking in the-party the-refused from continuing the-war and stand-its from refusing the-resolution and near stands-its from continuing the-war

(18) wa ḣattā al-ān fa inna al-nilâm al-Ṭrānîy mā yasālu ṣinda
and till the-now so that the-regime the-Iranian not still near

maqīfī-hi min râfîdī al-qarâr wa ṣinda maqtâî-hi min īstâmārī al-ḥarb
stand-its from continuing the-war and stand-its from refusing the-resolution and near stands-its from continuing the-war

(19) numâ taʾtī al-ṣabūrū (20) taʾnṣaqqātīn taṣalīhyīyīn jadîdāh turqadū maṭḥū-hū (21) bi
then case the-news about deals arising new held with-it in

badâfī tadwîrī al-ṣintaqāh wa farkī kullā aḥkâmī al-tasabîyyatī ṣalāy-hā.
aim destroying the-area and impose all forms the-dominations on-it.

(20) wa ṣalâhī fa ʾal-yâkī an yuḍūra mâjjlis al-amān qarâran bi al-ṭandīdī
and on-it then not enough to issue council the-security resolution in the-condemnation

wa al-ṭīmânatī li ṣalāliyyatī inqât al-ṭīrār (22) wa lâkūna maṣūlīyyatī-hi
and the-criticisms to operation shooting down the-aeroplane and but responsibility-its
A Big Crime vs a Minor One

(1) The International Security Council’s discussion of the shooting down of the Iranian civilian plane provides another chance for the Council to stand by the principles, duties, and responsibilities upon which the whole organization of the United Nations is based. (2) For if the shooting down of this airplane is to be seen as a criminal act worthy of condemnation, (3) then the crimes of the Iranian regime, with its obstinacy and belligerence, its continuation of the war, among a host of others, should also be pointed out as having contributed to this incident. (4) It is sufficient here to recall the tragedy at Mecca during the last Hajj pilgrimage, the continued killing of Iraqi prisoners of war, and the sacrifices of thousands of Iranian children in the war (5) which can only be described as crazy and corrupt.

(6) The responsibility of the Security Council should not stop at the crime of the shooting down of this plane, (7) nor at devoting its time and discussion to it. (8) Rather it should see it and deal with it as part and parcel of the continuing war between Iraq and Iran. (9) The Council should also look into it in terms of the Iraqi position (10) which seeks peace and stability as opposed to the contrary stance of the Iranian regime.

(11) If one agrees with the condemnation of the American crime (12) as a horrific act, (13) and agrees with the condemnation of shooting missiles at this civilian plane, (14) then one will agree that this has to be an occasion for the Council to follow up its Resolution No. 598 regarding the Iran-Iraq war; (15) this resolution specifies clearly (16) that sanctions should be imposed on the side rejecting the ceasefire, (17) and that an economic and arms blockade should be applied to that side also. (18) Nevertheless, Iran still rejects the resolution and still continues the war. (19) This is in addition to the news of its involvement (20) with the Americans in arm deals (21) aimed at destroying the region and imposing all forms of domination on it.

(22) Thus, it is not good enough for the International Security Council only to issue a resolution condemning the shooting down of the plane; (23) its responsibility is rather to issue a new resolution (24) that will impose sanctions on the Iranian regime. (25) One need not believe (26) that this would be a difficult thing to achieve (27) if it was backed by the United States of America, Soviet Union, France, Britain, and China. (28) Such a resolution would demonstrate the real stance of these countries concerning the Iran-Iraq war (29) without which their stance would be just words (30) meriting the condemnation of all the parties involved directly or indirectly in continuing the war.
al-salāhu...mas'ūliyyatun dawlīyyah
the-peace...responsibility international

(1) an-nāma jāmi'atī kaynārij, (2) wā biya min a-raqi jāmi'iyyī al-sūlam... wa
in front university Cambridge, and is it from most ancient universities the-world... and

min a-raqi al-muhāffitī al-sāalmīyyah, maktabatī fi al-fikrī, wa al-taqāla, (1) taḥaddata
from greatest the-circles the-world, prestige in the-thinking and the-culture, spoke

jālāmu al-husayn al-ṣaqla qabla al-mādiyyah, (3) wā huwa fi ḍiyārītī al-muhābītī
Majesty the-Hussein night before the-past, and he in hospitality the-elite

min al-muṣafarīna wa al-muṭaqṣaṣīna al-birītīniyyīn, (4) fa kaṭaba al-saqalī al-ṣāmiīyī, wā
from the-thinkers and the-educated the-British, then addressed the-mind the-human, and

al-jīma'ī al-sāalmīyī, min kāli-li-hīm... wā kullu alladīna yaṣā-lhīm an yūḥṣīdū
the-conscience the-world, from through-them... and all who concern-them to maintain

ṣalāh al-salāhu wa al-ḥḍārātī al-ṣāmiīyīyī, fi miṣṭaṣaṭīnā wā fi jamā'I
on the-peace and the-civilization the-human, in area-our and in all

biqāwī al-sūlama...
parts the-world...

(5) wā qaḍ tamṣaṭalat fi al-muhāṣaratī allātī al-qābāh al-ḥusayn, al-muṣṭaṣaṣabi
and verily represented in the-lecture which gave the-Hussein, the-openness

al-wāqīb, li al-ḥarātī al-dawlīyyah, bi al-ḥaqūqītī (6) allātī yataraṣṣīna qalay-bī
the-clear, to community the-international, in the-truth which must on-it

an tūdkī hū, (7) wā biya anna qiyābī al-salāhu can miṣṭaṣaṭī-nā, wā
to realize-it, and is-it that absence the-peace about area-our, and

al-taṣṣanūta al-isrā'īlīyī (8) allādī yuṣīfū talā al-ḥiftīfī bi al-arṣī al-muṭallāh, (9) wā
the-obstinate the-Israeli which persist on the-keeping in the-land the-occupied, and

ya'ūbū al-ḥirtīrāfī (10) bi anna al-muṣkalīta al-fīlīṣīnīyī jākhūrī al-nisā'ī al-tarābī
refuse the-recognition in that the-problem the-Palestinian essence the-conflict the-drab

al-isrā'īlīyī bi al-ṣaqqātī liṣā al-ṭirāẓātī al-nasāwīyyītī al-isrā'īlīyyah, (7) biya ṣawāḥīlū
the-Israeli in the-addition to the-arsenal the-nuclear the-Israeli, are factors
tuhaddidu bi ḫarbin ʿalamiyyatin waṣīkhah, (11) mālah yattaḵī ḫ-al-タルام bi asrī-hi threaten-they in war world iminent, unless take the-world in entirety-its

iṣrāʿītīn ʿāniyyah, (12) li taswiyati al-nīsāʿ fi al-manṭaqaḥ bi ʿakīlin miḥāli procedures this time, to reconcile the-conflict in the-area in form final..

(13) kādīlika ṣawda al-buṣayna, (14) anna al-sarasa bīman fi-hī munaqṣamatu al-tahbīr also clarify the-Hussein, that the- Arabs in who in-the organization the-liberation

al-filistinyyah, qad aṭrābū lān istiṣādī-hīm, li ṭahawwulī maṣʿūliyyātīhim, (15) wa the-Palestinian, verily expressed about readiness-their, to bear responsibilities-their, and

dīlika min ʿilālī maʿūrūtī fīs, wa al-qarārātī allātī qaḍarātī al-maʿālimu al-waṣānī that from through project FS, and the-resolutions which issued the-council the-national

al-filistinyyih, fi al-jazīrār.. (16) wa anna al-arwa, yatawaqqasu ʿalā tāsawwīn al-uṣūmat mat-the-Palestinian-in, in-the-Algiers.. and that the-matter, depend on cooperation the-society

al-dawliy, (17) likay nūǧāmīla ʿāsārī ʿalā al-iltizāmī bi al-μaqṣīfī nafsīh.. (18) wa li the-international to oblige the-Israel on the-adherence in the-stand self-it.. and to

yatasannā bi al-tālī al-muṣṭamiṣiri al-dawliy, (19) li ʾiḥālī al-salīma ʿalā-ṣarqi be able in the-end hold the-conference the-international, to establish the-peace in the-east

al-awṣaṭ, (20) wa dūlika ʿalā āṣārī al-insīḥāb al-ʿarṣāliy min kāffati al-arbaṭī the-middle, and that on basis the-withdrawal the-Israel from all the-lands

al-waṣīkhah, (21) wa manaḥī al-ṣārī al-filistinīy al-ṣawdāṭa, li numārāsīti ṣaqqī-hi fi the-occupied, and grant the-people the-Palestinian the-opportunity, to exercise right-its in

taqrīrī, (22) al-maṣāfīr faṣqa al-turābī al-filistinīy.. determining, the-destiny over the-soil the-Palestinian-

(23) wa qad ḫarīṣa al-buṣayna, (24) tālā an yuwaddiḥa, (25) anna al-hāḍamaha min al-muṣṭamiṣiri and verily coveted the-Hussein, on to clarify, that the-goal from the-conference

al-dawliy, huwa al-ittifāqī ḥawlī al-maṣībī, wa al-ṭuruqī allātī yajibū ittibāʿu-bī, the-international, the-agreement around the-methods, and the-ways which must follow-up-them,

(26) li taṣdiqī kāffati bunūdī al-γaρθραt kāmilatūn wa bi ḫusnī niyyah, (27) li ḫallī to carry out all articles the-resolutions complete and in good intention, to solve
الـِّْـِّـٰ~
At Cambridge University (2) which is one of the oldest and most prestigious universities in the world, (1) His Majesty King Hussein spoke of the human mind and the conscience of the International Community (3) during a seminar which was attended by a select gathering of British academics and intellectuals. (4) The King has addressed himself to human reason, the conscience of the international community, and to all those concerned with preserving peace and civilization in the Middle East and throughout the world.

(5) In his speech, the King spelt out clearly to the international Community the reality (8) which those involved must be made aware; (7) this is, the absence of peace in the Middle East, Israel's obstinacy (8) in holding onto the occupied territories (9) both refusing to recognize (10) that the Palestinian problem and that the Israeli nuclear arsenal (7) are the essence of Arab-Israeli conflict, and both are threatening an impending third world war, (11) unless the whole world takes immediate measures (12) to solve conclusively the conflict in the Middle East.

(13) The King also made it clear (14) that the Arabs, together with the PLO, had already expressed, (15) via the Fez accord and the resolutions issued by the Palestinian National Council in Algiers, their preparedness to bear their responsibility. (16) The matter now rests on the cooperation of the International community (17) to make Israel adopt a similar stance, and to allow an international peace conference to be held (19) with the goal of establishing peace in the Middle East. (20) This would be on the basis Israeli withdrawal from all occupied territories (21) and on the granting to the Palestinians the opportunity (22) to practice self-determination on their own soil.

(23) King Hussein was eager (24) to clarify (25) that the aim of the International conference would be to agree on the way (26) to carry out in good faith all of the resolutions, (27) and to solve the Palestinian issue and all aspects of the Arab-Israeli conflict. (28) This means therefore (29) that the conference would not be a place for bargaining about the Palestinian rights; (30) rather it is the entrusted mechanism enabling the Palestinians to exercise their rights on their own soil. (31) Undoubtedly, (32) this clarification will definitely leave no room for Israeli attempts (33) to scuttle the conference (34) and turn it into a routine gathering or into an arena for futile haggling.

(35) This warning given by King Hussein from the rostrum of Cambridge University to the International community, deserves to move peace-loving people in the world (36) so that they may play their part in turning this international action into a reality thereby putting an end to Israeli aggression (37) and opening the horizons (38) to the establishment of a just and lasting peace in the Middle East. (39) This would be in the interests of the whole International Community (40) ensuring that the sparks in the region (41) do not flare up and set the whole planet ablaze.
The extremism the-Israeli not change stand-our

(1) has not were the-elections the-Israeli, bet Arab in day from-the-days.

(2) and that the-results which resulted about-them lastly, not

(3) and enter within accounts the-gain and the-loss on the-level the-Arab.

(4) if were not seclude from the-indicators, which not could ignore-them.

(5) and In lead-Its, that these the-results, verily make better known the-more from

(6) the-extremism against process the-peace, and inspire in that the-road to-it, become

(7) and in light this the- outcome, confirmed the-satisfaction in necessity organizing the-action

(8) as long as that-it aim in the-end, to establish the-peace the-just

(9) and enable the-people
al-filiştîniy min mu'ūrasatî ḥuqūqi-bî al-waṭaniyyati faṣqa ardi-hi.
the-Palestinian from exercise right-its the-national over land-its

(10) va mabâ yakun ṣâlu al-sulta, allâtî sa tatâ'alla fi al-kiyyûni al-shubûniy natiṭjatan
and whatever be shape the-authority, which will consist in the-entity the-Zionist as a result of
li al-intikhâbî al-arâb, (11) fa inna al-mawqûfa al-arabiyy, (12) al-ladî yutâllîba bi taqdi
to the-elections the-last, then that the-stand the-Arab, which demand in bold
al-muṭamari al-dawliy, al-muṣawwâdi bi al-šalâhiyyâti al-ḵāmilatî, (11) sa yabqâ tâbitan
the-conference the-international, the-supplied In the-authorities the-complete, will remain fixed
lâ yatagayyar.. (13) kadâlîka sa yabqâ al-mawqûfu al-urduniyyu al-gawîy, (14) al-dâ-qî mâ
not change.. also will remain the-stand the-Jordanian the-national, the-caller to
bia'î al-gawâti al-dâtiyyati al-arabiyyah, (15) wa al-râfîdu li'an yakûna al-urdunnu, bad'ilan
build the-power the-self the-Arab, and the-refuser to be the-Jordan, substitute
\(^{\text{(16)}\text{}}\) wa fi al-waqti dâthî, sa yuwaqîlu al-urdunnu, al-qiyîma bi dawri-hi al-Tijâbiy,
change.. and in the-time self-it, will continue the-Jordan, the-doing in role-its the-positive,
taṭta al-muḍallati al-arabiyyati, fi sabilh iistiṣâdati al-salâmi al-ḥaqiqiy fi
under the-umbrella the-Arab, in sake restoration the-peace the-real in
al-minṭaqah, (17) wa huwa al-salâmu allâqî lâ yuwaqîna an yatâqaqa, (18) dûna an yastaqâda
the-region, and is-it the-peace which not could to achieved, without to restore
al-ṣârîba al-filiştîniyu, ḥuqûqa-hu faṣqa ardi-hi.
the-people the-palestinian, right-its over land-its

(19) wa bâda yawî bi kulli wuḏūhi, (20) anna ḥiyâra al-salâmi, huwa waḍdâhu al-maṭrûbu
and this means in every clarity, that choice the-peace, is alone the-broached
\(^{\text{(21)}\text{}}\) wa anna-hu lâ majâla li al-muṣâwanati salayh, min qibali ayyî puṭâtîn
Arab..
and that-it not way to the-bargain on-it, from by any authority
Israel Extremism Will Not Change Our Position

(1) The Israeli elections have never been an Arab contest. (2) So, the latest results do not register as either gains or losses in Arab terms, (3) although they have implications in terms of loss or gain (4) that cannot be ignored. (5) Most notably, they point to an increasing polarization away from peace (6) suggesting that the path towards it has become more difficult now than ever.

(7) In the light of this result, there is confirmation for the need to organize United Arab action towards enabling it to pursue a variety of options, (8) as long as these options are aimed, ultimately, at establishing a just and comprehensive peace, based on the restoration of the usurped Palestinian rights (9) enabling them to exercise their national rights on their territory.

(10) Regardless of whatever new form the Israeli State may take as a result of these elections, (11) the Arab position (12) which calls for the convening of an effective international conference, (11) will remain resolute and unchanged, (13) and the Jordanian national position, (14) which calls for autonomous Arab power (15) and rejects the idea that Jordan is the sole representative for the Palestinian people, (13) will remain steadfast. (16) At the same time, Jordan will continue a positive role under the Arab umbrella in order to restore peace to the region, (17) peace that can only be established (18) by restoring the rights of the Palestinians on their own land.

(19) Clearly, this means (20) that the peaceful option is the only one set out by the Arab side, (21) so there can be no trade off by any other authority formed in the 'Zionist entity'.

(22) It goes without saying then, (23) that the Jordanian stance is steadfast. (24) For experience has shown Jordan to be stronger than the pressures bearing down on it; (25) it will also remain as resolute and unshakable as ever.
(1) تامام بيان ماتا الرأي و比利时 بمانة و بغداد، جاءت
في اتباع طرق التحالف بين المنظمتين ولم تتحدد، كما
زيارة الرأي و بมั้ر، ألاق بحى دوسلو، الرأي و زيد
زيارة الرأي، للاجتهال في فإائل الرأي و البشارة
(2) و visita اخبار الرأي و السير في 明天
الرئيس زيد
الرئيس سداني حسين، (3) و و visita عناصر الرأي و
الرئيس طاهى ياسين، (4) و visita محادثات
التعاون، بين المنظمتين الرأيتين، و تبادل الرأي و
(5) و visita العام
الوضع العربي، مثل ما هو...
(6) و visita الإستعيدة الرأي و إغلاق النشاط، (7) و visita
الرئيس و رئيس الوزراء، استخدمت التقارير، عن دعم
الرجلين الاردن، في اجتماع ديفو، في عناصر الرأي، و التفاوض
كما إنها في المياه، فإنها تجدها، (8) و visita
الرجلين الدبلوماسيين، على بالنسبة من جميع
الرجلين الدبلوماسيين، على ملهى
(9) و visita
الرجلين الدبلوماسيين، على ملهى
الرجلين الدبلوماسيين، على ملهى
الرجلين الدبلوماسيين، على ملهى
الرجلين الدبلوماسيين، على ملهى
jaddah,(13) li muwajjelati al-ta'awuni al-tunahiy,(14) tanfigan li tavjihat al-jalali al-malik
new, to follow up the-cooperation bilateral, carrying out directions Majesty the-King
al-husayn, wa siyadati al-ra'is saddam husayn.
the-Hussein, and Mr. the-president saddam hussein.

(15) wa hakadha, yutarjimu al-urdunnu wa al-tiragu, al-iltizama al-qawmiy, allaqit yakhumu
and therefore, translate the-Jordan and the-Iraq, the-commitment the-national, which control
calragat-iihah, ilaa wuqarainina qawmiyyatin mustamirrah, tahtallu makhana-ha ka namudajin
relations-their, to exercise national continuous, occupy place-its as model
ma'roof wa mu'rif, ilaa yusaghi an takuna-talay-hi al-talagatu al-sarabiyyah...
promising and honorable, to what must to be on-it the-relations the-arab...

(16) wa ganiyun tan al-tadkiri, (17) ann hadda al-namudaja, qad rasaka hudurahu, fi
and needless about the-reminding, that this the-model, verily firmly rooted, presence, in
al-ta'yidhi al-urduniy al-lamahduddi li al-tirag, wa fi al-ta'awuni al-tiragiy al-lamahduddi
the-support the-Jordanian the-unlimited to the-Iraq, and in the-cooperation the-Iraqi the-unlimited
wa al-urdun.. (18) wa kana al-namudaja gishah, wa la yawalu mu'asirun (19) tali anna al-wagta
with the-Jordan... and was the-model self-it, and not still indicator on that the-situation
al-sarabiyy, yuqunu as yassuma ila al-makunanati al-marjwati lahu.. (20) wa anna al-iltizama
the-arab, could to rise to the-status the-hoped to-it.. and that the-adherence
al-sarabi bi al-mas'uliyati al-qawmiyyah, bi istitqaati-hi an yanabiqha hadda al-hadaf.
the-arab in the-responsibility the-national, in capability-its to achieve this the-goal...

(21) inna al-jama'ira al-sarabiyyah, (22) wa hiya tara fi al-talaghti al-urduniyyati al-tiragiyati,
emphatic the-crowds the-arab, and are-they see in the-relations the-Jordanian the-Iraqi,
tarjamatun anqa'.decrypt li taqalludu-wiha, ilaa wuqiqin sarabiyyin jadd... (23) lana yawchuha
translation honest to ambitions-their, to reality Arab new.. not should-they
ilaa an tu'akida dar-wataba, ilaa tayyiq al-nazidi min al-talabun al-sarabiy,
nothing but to confirm, call, to achieving the-more from the-solidarity the-arab,
A Promising Model

(1) The short working visit which Prime Minister Zaid Al Rifai paid to Baghdad yesterday was in accord with the strong fraternal relations existing between Jordan and Iraq. (2) During the visit, Al-Bifaly was received by President Saddam Hussein (3) and held constructive talks with Mr. Taba Yasin Ramadan (4) in which they discussed the strengthening of cooperation between the two countries (5) and exchanged views about the current situation in the Arab world.

(6) The Prime Minister chose (7) to express once again (8) Jordan’s support for Iraq in its stance in the Geneva negotiations (9) and to reaffirm (10) that the glorious Iraqi victories are a source of pride to all Arabs. (11) Be also praised (12) the determination of the officials in both countries (13) to find additional areas of cooperation, (14) following the directives of His Majesty King Hussein and His Excellency Saddam Hussein.

(15) In this way, Jordan and Iraq are developing the popular commitment that governs their relations into a continuous practice which stands as a glorious example of how Arab relations should be.

(16) Needless to say, this pattern has been established through Jordan’s unlimited support for Iraq and Iraq’s unlimited cooperation with Jordan. (17) It stands as proof (18) that the Arab world can attain its objectives (19) and achieve what it has set out to achieve by commitment to its national objectives.

(20) The people of the Arab world (21) who regard the relations between Jordan and Iraq as a faithful realization of their aspirations for a new Arab order (20) are therefore encouraged to call for a greater degree of Arab solidarity which goes beyond slogans to practical policies. (22) For it is this solidarity which will enable the Arabs to face the challenges which threaten them (23) and to play a fundamental role in activating the process of peace in the region (24) in such a way as to restore to them their usurped rights (25) and make the region an oasis of security and stability.
الرأي - 11/12/1986

على النجاح الأعمالي الشهير

(1) من حليّة النضال، استقلاله النضالulfillment al-حاسي al-jami, allaqf afdi bi-hi jalālatu al-hussayn, lāa from through the-speech the-inclusive, which gave in-it majesty the-Hussein, to

غابتفي al-سياطي al-القطب، يدلاً bi wudhū, (2) من الأمة al-carabiyah، newspaper the-politics the-Kuwaiti, manifest-it in clarity, that the-nation the-العرب,

على النجاح الأعمالي الشهير
(3) لن ينفع في النجاح الشهير على النجاح الأعمالي الشهير

الجهة al-سياسي al-القوى، ينفع في النجاح الشهير

(4) والذين can al-الأعلى، (5) من السيادة al-lادنوا و al-العراق و al-السورية و

والأخرى al-السورية، (6) من الأعلى bi am yujī al-jabhat al-السوريّة... (7) ت Đềب و al-الشمال، من بعدها that revive the-front the-eastern... and

والجيش li al-carabi quwata radīn caskarjyyatan kubrā, lam tatabaqqaq la-hum, fi yawin min allow to the-Arab power restraint military great, has not accomplished to-the,, in day from

الساحة, (8) و هيا min abhami al-mutahallabūt li tarāli mirāni al-quwa fi the-days، و is-it from most important the-demands to balance scale the-power in

المنطقة al-السورية al-isra'īlīyya, (9) ل وهدي al-الشمال al-nasari the-region and force the-aggressors the-Israeli on think again the-sight

في خصوصيّته، و al-الخليفة bi al-salāmi al-الشمال al-nasrī fi in accounts-their، and the-acceptance in the-peace the-just and the-comprehensive in
الmintaqah, (9) alaaddī lā yażūlūna yuqūwīn-ūna-hu wa yahūlūna dūna istīlāghī the-region, which not still resist-they-it and intervene without departure

masīratī-hi bhattā al-ān.
proceeding-its till the-now.

(10) wa lā šakka, (11) fī anna hūdīhi al-quwah, tukanmilu maṣrīna al-salāmī al-ṣarabīy, (12) wa and not doubt, in that this the-power, complement project the-peace the-ārab, and

maṣrīnu-hu lāniyyaā bāda qabilat muṣṣasimatu al-tāhīrī al-fīlāṭṣiniyyah, al-ṣarārīyā support-it specially after to accept organization the-liberation the-palestinian, the-two-resolutions

raṣīq 242 wa 338 (13) wa lom yuqūd hasāka, mī yuqīsīn muṣṣalabatū-hā bi-hi aktāre min number 242 and 338 and has not remain there, what could demand-its in-it more from gālīk, (14) wa lā yūkīf anna al-ṣāmala alaaddī yaqūnū bi-hi al-busayn, li iqqāmati al-ḥiyyāni that, and not conceal that the-action which make in-it the-ḥusayn, to establish the-entity

alaaddī tanbahāqu san-hu tilka al-quwah huwa adāʿ un qaṣwīy tālī mustāsan raftī (16) faḍīla which emerge about-it that the-power is performance national on level high in addition anna-hu adāʿ un waqīṣiy yuṣību camaliyyata al-salāmī (17) al-buṣda alaaddī about that-it-is performance realistic give process the-peace the-dimension which

yajal-hū qabilatān lī al-tarfīd.. make-it acceptable to the-carry out...

(18) wa kūna min al-tabībiy (19) wa al-ḥālata hūdīhi, (20) ann yuʿakīda jalāīlatu huwa darūrata candati and was from the-natural and the-case this, to confirm Majesty-his necessity return

miṣr al-ṣaqīqa līlā al-jamiʿati al-ṣarabīyīyīh, (21) wa ann yuqūwa līlā tādīlî miṣrīqī Egypt the-sister to the-League the-ārab, and to call to ascending charter al-jamīʿah, (22) tilī al-naḥwi alaaddī yansajīmu màt al-nawṣīyyati al-nūmaysarati al-māṣūdāti the-League, on the-way which conform with the-quality the-distinguished the-wanted lī al-adāʿ l al-ṣarabīyī (23) wa kaḏīlīka līlā raqīdī al-gimmati al-ṣarabīyyati al-ṣādiyyah, wa to the-performance the-ārab.. and also to hold the-summit the-ārab the-usual, and

intaṣīḥī inṣiqqād-hī. regularity hold-its.

(24) līna qiyīnā al-kiyīnī al-ṣarabīyī ṭarqīy al-bāḥr al-abyāṣ al-mūtasassīṭ wa yakūn emphatic establishment the-entity the-ārab eastern the-sea the-white the-middle will be

intaṣīḥqātan kubrā lī al-naqīṣī al-ṣarabīyī (25) wa wa yakūnū al-istījāhata al-qaswīyyah uprising great, to the-reality the-ārab... and will be the-response the-national
li al-nizâli al-бuẕ̇liyy alladi yapâğûhu rijâlu al-intifâdati al-filistîniyyah, to the-struggle the-heroic which strive-they men the-uprising the-palestinian,

wa niâ'â u-bâ wa atšâlu-hâ, fi al-mawâni'at al-muštâlah... (26) wa hiya al-intîjîbâtu and women-its and children-its, in the-areas the-occupied... and is-it the-response

allatî ғailâm tatâllara ilayhâ, hâšî'î-i al-abî, (27) wa intâšârat-hâ al-jâmâ'îr which for so long look for to-it, those the-people, and waited-it the-crowds

al-tarâbiyâtu fi kullî mâhûn. the-Arab in every place.

(28) wa sa yapâkru al-târîku, bi al-îtaštî wa al-fâkûr jasî'î al-şâdâtî al-carab, alladi-na and will mention the-history, in the-glory and the-pride all the-leaders the-Arab, who-they

yuâsîkûna fi iqâmatî al-kiyámî al-manâ'ûd. (29) wa sa yapâkru al-târîku anna al-ûsâya participants-they in establish the-entity the-hoped for... and will mention the-history that the-Hussein

bin talâl. kâna al-dîfî wa al-munâssîga li âfjâmî injîzîn qawâyî fi non talal. was-the-caller and the-coordinator to greatest achievement national in

al-buğbati al-muâşîgarah. the-period the-modern.

---

On the Verge of a Great Achievement

(1) Through King Hussein's comprehensive speech which he gave to the Kuwaitî newspaper, it has become very clear (2) that the Arab nation is on the verge of a great national achievement, represented by the entity His Majesty is attempting to establish between the East Mediterranean Arab countries along with another entity between the Maghrib countries (3) to form, with the Gulf Cooperation Countries, an Arab power under the umbrella of the Arab League.

(4) Needless to say (5) a body comprising Jordan, Iraq, Syria, Egypt, and Southern Yemen (6) aimed at reviving the eastern front (7) and providing the Arabs with large defensive military power has never been achieved before. (8) This power is one of the most important needs for the Arabs to balance the scale of power in the region and to force Israel to think again and accept a just and comprehensive peace in the region, (9) the peace that they still reject or resist up till now.

(10) There is no doubt (11) that this power complements (12) and supports the Arab peace process, particularly after the PLO's acceptance of resolutions 242 and 338. (13) There is nothing left, therefore, for Israel to demand. (14) It should be remembered (15) that the action King Hussein has undertaken in establishing this entity is a natural duty at a higher level (16) in addition to the fact that it is a practical act, giving the peace process (17) the dimension through which it can be carried out.

(18) It was natural, (19) in this particular instance, (20) for His Majesty king Hussein to affirm the necessity of the return of Egypt to the Arab League (21) and to call for a modification of the Arab League charter (22) in a way that conforms with the distinctive characteristics needed for Arab action. (23) It was also natural that the king should call for the holding of the usual Arab conference and the organization of its timetable.

(24) It should be emphasized that the establishment of an Arab entity east of the Mediterranean sea will in itself be an uprising corresponding to the reality of the Arab world; (25) it will also be an Arab response to the heroic struggle which men, women and children of the uprising are engaged in in the occupied territories. (26) This kind of response is the one that these people have waited (27) and waited for, for a long time.

(28) History will record in honor and glory all the Arab leaders who participated in establishing this entity, (29) and it will record the fact that it was King Hussein Bin Talal who called for and coordinated the greatest Arab achievement in modern times.
بوا بـ "الـبـأـ" ـ 24 / 6 / 1988

نورًا بـ "الـبـأـ" ـ 24/6

welcome in the-move the-Japanese

(1) bi irtiyāḥin, wa tiqatīn fi taʿzirī al-scalqāti al-urduniyyati al-yābāniyyati al-musayyarah, in comfort, and confidence in enhance the-relations the-Jordanian the-Japanese the-special,

نورًا بـ "الـبـأـ" ـ 24/6

welcome in visit the-Mr. Suzuki Ṣūrūk minister foreign the-Japanese, who

waṣala ilā samān ann, (2) fi niṣṭāqi al-jawlatī allatī yuqūmu bi-hā ilā al-mintaqah. arrived to Ṣāmān yesterday, in scale the-tour which make in-it to the-region.

(3) inna ḥalqīhī al-zīyārah, wa al-muḥādaqātī allatī jarat kīlālu-

height the-prince Ḥassān deputy Muṣtajīr, and between

al-jawla al-yābāniyy..., wa tilka allatī jarat, bayna al-sayyid raʾīs al-wusūrūʾ, the-guest the-Japanese... and that which conducted, between the-Mr. president the-ministers

wa al-sayyid Ṣūrūk, (4) faṣlīn, ṣamān dara bayna waziray kārījīyati al-urdun and the-Mr. Ṣūrūk... in addition, to what conducted between two ministers foreign the-Jordan

wa al-yābān, wa al-wasīrādī al-muṣāwī yarʾasānīḥūm, (5) kuṭbī ḫālika, kāna tatwilīn and the-Japan, and the-two-delegates which they headed-they, all that, was crowning

lī al-jabādī al-nāṣibīhī al-muṭawārah, allatī ṭuqabala samūw al-wazīr Ḥassān, kīla-hī to the-efforts the-successful the-fruitful, which made highness the-prince Ḥassān, during

al-zīyārātī al-aḏīrāh allatī qīma bi-hā, ilā al-yābān... wa allatī istatīrī the-visit the-last which made in-it, to the-Japan... and which could-he

ṭīla-hī, ann yuḏrī ṣalā al-scalqāti al-urduniyyati al-yābāniyyah, al-sāzīda min al-ḥusūs, during-it, to add on the-relations the-Jordanian the-Japanese, the-more from the-power,

wa al-fāʿīlyrāh... (6) wa min būna, yatabādā bi wuḏūh, (7) anna al-najāba and the-effectiveness... and from here, manifest in clarity, that the-success

allaḥ haqqāqah huṣawūh fi tilka al-zīyārah, būna min al-ṣawṣūli al-sāsīyāh, which achieved-he highness in that the-visit, is-it from the-factors the-essential,

(8) allatī sajlārat tokyo, ilā al-qāṭīūbī min qaḏyāʾ al-mintaqah, wa al-qāyūm which encourage Tokyo, to the-approaching from issues the-region, and the-make

bī al-taḥarrūki allāhī yuqūduh bi-al-sayyid Ṣūrūk faṣḥa ṣāḥatī-hā... in the-move which lead-it the-Mr. Ṣūrūk over areš-ṣāhī...
(9) wa ganiyyun tan al-ta'ãfãr, (10) anna al-qaråda al-yâbãniy li al-urdun, huwa tajjamutun and needless about the-reminding, that the-loan the-Japanese to the-Jordan, is-it translation li tafahmii al-yâbãn, li muwaqi'i al-urdun al-ta'ãfãr al-qaråda al-ãjãh, ka quwati to understanding the-Japan, to stands the-Jordan the-mindful and the-courageous, as power istidãlin wa istiqãririn fi al-mintaqah, (11) wa ta'ãfãrin tan al-ta'ãfãr al-ta'ãfãr, balance and stability in the-region, and expression about the-relations the-strong, bayna al-baladu'ayn. between the-two-countries.

(12) wa alladãt la ãyaka fi, (13) anna al-ta'ãfãr al-yâbãniy, (14) alladã tama'a fi al-mintaqah, and which not doubt in-it, that the-move the-Japanese, which started in the-region, huwa ta'ãfãdun alladã in-ta'ãfãr al-yâbãn, bi al-ãjãh alladã ta'ãfãr al-Ïatãr finaqa muhãtni-hã.. is-it confirmation on concern the-Japan, in the-events which occur over arena-its...

va burhãsan qawiy, alladã al-misãdãqiyyati, alladã tatawlatu bi-hi, wa al-ãraj and proof powerful, on the-authenticity, which enjoy in-it, and the-determination alladã tatahlla bi-hi (14) li muwãsalati wa ta'ãfãfi wa ta'ãfãri jardãb al-dubluzãniyyah, (15) which enjoy in-it to continue and intensify and develop efforts-its the-diplomatic, li da'vãl tanãliyyati al-salâmi fi al-mintaqah.. (16) wa baddâ kulluh, yajalatu min al-yâbãn to support process the-peace in the-region... and this all, make from the-Japan quwatan qãdiratan alladã al-muãsãhmati al-far'aãlati, fi ta'ãfãqi al-salâmi al-tamãlli wa power capable on the-contribution the-effective, in achieving the-peace the-just and al-ãamãlî the-comprehensive in the-east the-middle.

(17) wa fi du'ãl hâdhã al-mu'ta'ãfãt jami'-bã, yumkinu al-ãqwãl (18) anna al-ta'ãfãrka dãtu'b huwa and in light these the-outcomes all-them, could the-saying that the-move self-it is-it mu'ââsirun Ïajãbiy, (19) wa yu'alâkudu anna qãdiyyata al-salâmi fi al-mintaqah, gab indicator positive, and confirm that issue the-peace in the-region, verify istaqãbatall la jami'-bã, quwatan sinã'ãqiyyat al-kubra, fi 'ala al-nû mu'ta'ãfãr, muna'ajtala'tan attract to side-its, power industrial great in world-our the-contemporaneous, represented fi al-yâbãn.. (20) wa anna hâdhã al-ãqwãh, bi ta'ãfãri-bã al-iqti'sãdiy al-mu'ama'yan, (21) tasta'ãfãti in the-Japan... and that this the-power, in effect-its the-economic the-special, could an tumãsira darwãna ãqatãlala, (22) li isãdati al-salâmi wa al-istiqãrri lila al-mintaqah..(23) to exercise role real, to restore the-peace and the-stability to the-region...

415
With comfort and confidence, strengthening distinguished Japanese-Jordanian relations, Jordan welcomes the visit of Mr. Susuki Auno, Minister of Japanese Foreign Affairs (2) who arrived in Amman yesterday (3) as part of a series of visits to the region.

This kind of visit and the kind of talks between His Highness Prince Hasan, King Hussein's viceroy, and the Japanese guest, together with the talks conducted between Jordan's Prime Minister and Mr. Auno, (5) in addition to those between Jordan and Japan's Foreign Affairs Ministers along with their delegations, (6) were a culmination of the fruitful efforts made by Prince Hasan's last visit to Japan.

It has become clear that the success accomplished by Prince Hasan's visit is one of the main factors (9) which encouraged Tokyo to approach the issues of this region and make moves headed by Mr. Auno.

Needless to say, (11) that the Japanese loan to Jordan is an expression of Japan's understanding to Jordan's courageous and rational stand as a stabilizing power in the region and an expression of the friendly relations between the two countries.

Undoubtedly, (13) the Japanese move in this region, is a confirmation of Japan's concern towards current Arab current issues and strong proof of its authenticity and persistence (14) in continuing its diplomatic efforts (15) to support the peace process in the region. (16) All this makes Japan a capable, effective and contributing country for achieving a just and comprehensive peace in the region.

In the light of all this, it cannot be denied (18) that the Japanese move itself is a positive indication; (19) affirming the fact that the peace process has galvanized to its side, in our modern world, a large industrial power, represented by Japan. (20) This power, by its effective and distinguished economy, (21) could exercise an important role (22) restoring peace and stability to the region. (23) What is more satisfactory (24) is also the fact that Japan has unchanging stands, demanding Israel to withdrawal from all occupied Arab territories and the termination of the Iran-Iraq war without any delay.

Once again, we welcome Mr. Suzuki, the Minister of Japan's Foreign Affairs, (25) and express our confidence of the glorious future (27) which gives the Japanese-Jordanian relations power (28) and makes the Arab-Japanese relations more fruitful and prosperous.
الاتفاقية اليمنية... فرصة للعرب

(1) الاتفاقية اليمنية تما معاكة التواصّل لصالح يمن يستمر الاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين 한ات بجانب اليمن.

للمشتركة اليمنية والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(2) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(3) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(4) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(5) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(6) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(7) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(8) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(1) الاتفاقية اليمنية تما معاكة التواصّل لصالح يمن يستمر الاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين هات بجانب اليمن.

(2) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(3) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(4) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(5) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(6) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(7) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.

(8) والاتفاق الذي وصل إليه بين اليمن والهندية والدول ذات الصلة، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية، وافتتحت الدولة اليمنية.
من آل صعبتي آل مهدي الاحزاب (9) عاشت قاسى كان قاسي اليمان
من الفجرات والمحور والقيقالتمامية بحنا الهميقي.
من الفصل والانقسام والصراع والمعارضة بين الأخوة.

(10) من الناقة اليمانية مقاومة有多少 من العرب (11) وله كرامة لـ
يشمله يمد الناس الناس الياجور <الولاية الفجرات
نجبه على الأمة والوطن وتستوجب للعرب، وله كرامة إلى
الفرقين بين الولدان الولد (12) ولن يرفعهم إلىكرامة
والفجダ بين أبناء الوطن الواحد. (13) ولكن الاستثمار المشترك
النفط في منطقة النزاعات على بينة هي سعدت قوامتين
الرئيسي الذي يعيشه اليماني، ونرونهم في
الوجود إلى النهاية دولة ومن قومية وعربية واسعة.

(15) من يمننا فقراء مشتركون هو أفضل ألف مرة
من الدولة المrichText، (16) فدع أبناء اليمانيات أكثر من
المقتاتل، (17) ووحدةهم (18) فكيف (19) إذا اتفاق أبناء
اليمني الجنسي المشترك والمالية في أشياء الدينار.
(20) فكيف إذا اتفاق أبناء
ال اليمني الخاص المشترك والمالية في أشياء الدينار.
(21) فكيف إذا اتفاق أبناء
اليمني الخاص المشترك والمالية في أشياء الدينار.
(22) فكيف إذا اتفاق أبناء
اليمني الخاص المشترك والمالية في أشياء الدينار.

الدستور اليماني إلى أثر مكتبة إلى مكتبة ورياضة
زيادة ورفع المستوى والحياة.

الديدية.
The Agreement of Yemen

(1) The agreement which has been reached between both parts of Yemen for resolving their disputes and working out joint investment is an important step for the future of both sides. (2) This agreement represents the triumph of good sense over ignorance (3) and attachment over hatred, (4) because the people of Aden and the people of Sanaa are in need of combined work towards unity. (5) They desperately need the oil revenues (6) to build up their country which has suffered so much for so long from poverty and need. (7) The Arab alliance did not need new bloodletting to be added to the Arab continuing bloodshed, (8) and hence the agreement between both North and South Yemen has been welcomed with optimism and joy by all Arab nations, (9) which have similarly suffered and suffer still the pain of separation, conflict, and fratricide. (10) It should be emphasized that Yemen’s the oil is strength for the Arabs. (11) It is also good for the people of Yemen, (12) and as such it should not be allowed to become a factor for separation and antagonization between people of the same country. (13) On the contrary, the joint investment in the disputed areas should add strength to the unifying spirit which embodies the people of Yemen, (14) who recognize that the division of their country is indeed a national and pan-Arab disaster. (15) A united Yemen that is poor is much better than a rich Yemen that is at war with itself. (16) Because the blood of Yemenis is worth more than oil, (17) and their dignity and unity is more important than dollars. (18) Imagine how wonderful it would be (19) if the people of Yemen agree on joint investment (20) and employ these benefits for the good of their own people and for establishing a national development program (21) to raise the standards of living (22) and provide the people with the minimum requirements for a dignified life. (23) For these reasons then, the agreement between the North and South of Yemen has been welcomed with open arms by both the people of Yemen and Arabia. (24) Hoping then that this agreement becomes a preface for other agreements between them, (25) in a way that it restores unity to the divided country (26) and provides the people with a clean and dignified way of life.
النهاية والعقلاء... في الجوانب... في المكان... الخطأ

1 - يابث (2) انتهاك الالتماس الفي النزاعي الفي الاستسلام حيث يتم تعلم الممارسة في الاقتصاد العائم الزميل.

2 - السفر إلى العنف في المواقف العمرانية في وسائل الإعلام.

3 - في الجوانب التكتيكية في 므كة الواقعة في الوقت المتوازن:

4 - فاته على طائرات المهاجرون島ة في الشرق الأوسط، حيث تراجع القبول، لذا، لم يستطع بعض الأساتذة أن يحتجوا على هذا الإجراء.

5 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

6 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

7 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

8 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

9 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

10 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

11 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

12 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

13 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

14 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

15 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

16 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.

17 - ومن ثم، في حركة السفر في تدابير الطوارئ والأسلحة والوسائل المتعددة المثيرين للقلق.
The Wrong Means in the Wrong Place

(1) It seems obvious (2) that there are some politicians in the Middle East who have mastered the art of choosing the wrong means in the wrong place (3) in order to identify themselves with struggle.

(4) It seems also obvious (5) that hijacking aeroplanes has become an acceptable method for those people, (6) since it involves little by way of weapons (7) but much in the way of publicity and recognitions.

(8) When they choose Kuwait as their platform (9) and an aeroplane carrying innocent civilians-including women and children-as their target, (10) When this becomes their decision, (11) then the natural question is: (12) what crime are those people, who just happen to be unlucky enough to be on that plane, guilty of?

(13) Putting aside the innocent victims, a more important question to be asked of these 'hijacking cadets' is: (14) what good could possibly come out of it? (15) What great revolutionary political change has ever been brought by terrorism?

(16) Nighttime shooting, hijackings, bombing property (18) may get a reaction (19) and be the stuff of many sad, thrilling and exciting stories, (20) but, could it have any effect in furthering the cause of liberation?

(21) This is the real issue, (22) and if you the news reports confirms that the hijackers demands are for the release of those sentenced for bombings in Kuwait, (23) then the other question that needs answering: (24) should threats and bombings as a way of reacting to a just judicial system? (25) Is it too late for those sentenced to have an opportunity of putting their cases (26) so as to defend them by submitting anything they want?

(27) There are many questions to be answered, but each one gives the same response: (28) this is the wrong choice with a wrong means in a wrong place.
مرحباً باليديم.. حالة الاستقلال

(1) لم يتردد الحضور الفلسطيني في إعلان سعادته في الدولة المستقلة

(2) لا يمكن أن يندد الفلسطينيون في العالم في حقيقة الانتفاضة.

(3) لا تزال القضايا الفلسطينية المسيرة، و(4) لم يبت قهر الفلسطينيين.

(5) لقد تكبدت أصوات التعبير عن العدالة.

(6) ألقوا القتال للعدالة، و(7) لم يتردد الفلسطينيون.

(8) لا تزال هناك تنوع في هذه الفترة.

(9) لم تنصب الجهود في موت الأبطال.
al-mu'tallah, (9) wa ragaa al-tabaddi al-isra'iliyy al-mustamir li mu'tayyayati janubi lubban the-occupied, and despite the-threat the-Israeli the-continuous to camps southern Lebanon

(10) wa ragaa akhatra min qabdatin hadidiyatin wa harririyyah wa zalat maharatun fi wajhi and despite more from fist iron and silk what still reputable in face

al-fiiliatiniyy hunaa wa hunak the-Palestinian here and there

(11) la'akma al-ma'tala al-filistiniyy al-cafat lam yakun fi ilqin al-istiqali fi but the-example the-Palestinian the-great has not be in declaration the-independence in

lakramin fillatiniyyatin wuqarratun fahasab, (12) bal kuma aydan fi 'ulika al-wasy wa moment Palestinian honorable alone, but was too in that the-awareness and
tilka al-mas'uliyah allata qabala bi-ha al-munassasatu al-muta'ahaffatu zalal al-bayani that the-responsibility which accepted in-it the-organisation the-reserved on the-statement al-siyasiyya alladigh adaara tam al-sagil al-watanyy, (13) fa inna al-qubula bi ma'atig the-political which issued about the-council the-national, then that the-acceptance in logic

kuduri al-aqalliyyati li ra'iy al-aglaibiyyah wa 'adami subhaturi hau'ulal ila al-qafa'ahah submission the-minority to opinion the-majority and not initiative those to the-repudiation

wa idhali 'arbi-naa al-fillatiiniyy fi dawwamati al-giraiti wa al-misafati yawsitul and cause to enter people-our the-Palestinian in whirl the-struggles and the-conflicts represent

bidayatan li marhalatun jadiyatun min al-tamali al-filistiniyy tanzi'u narratan wa ila al-abad beginning to stage new from the-action the-Palestinian abandon once and to the-perpetuity

fikrata qafti al-yakati basla <<afali al-subullu li tabirri filiatini>>! idea fighting the-brothers around <<best the-methods to liberate Palestine>>!

(14) wa la' 'akka (15) ana hagh al-ma'tala ya'alu al-dastata al-cafitdata maqbulatan and not doubt that this the-example make the-state the-ready accepted

(16) hataa min duwall al-ca'alam allata (17) qalam tagararat bi inqisamati al-fillatiiniyyatin even from countries the-world which as long as supplicated in divisions the-Palestinians

va tanhauri him wa luju'l-him ila al-silab (18) li haalit kilafati him, and conflict-in their in resort-their to the-weapon to solve conflicts-their

(19) wa la' 'akka bar'da dalik (20) ana haghibi al-farhata al-asa'ibiyata al-fillatiiniyyah wa and not doubt after that that this the-happiness the-public the-Palestinian and

haghibi al-mas'uliyata al-wataniiyyah min jambii al-munassasati biya al-wajhu al-naqi'du this the-responsibility the-national from side the-organization is-it the-face the-contradictory

li dalika al-safl alladigi tafa'anala bi-ha al-mas'uluna al-sara'ikiiyan wa bar'du al-orobbiyuna to that the-abandoning which dealt in-it the-responsibles the-American and some the-Europeans
ma' hādī al-irān (21) allaḏī asqata al-katīra min ḥujajī-him wa ḡarrā'i-him. with this the-declaration which cause to fall the-more from excuses-their and means-their

(22) anna isrā'īl fa qad adrakat tamān ahāmiyyata hādī al-irān (23) allaḏī however Israel then verily realized completely importance this the-declaration which

waspāva-bu rā'īs waṣara' al-tādūw ḫāq ūmīr bi anna-bu ḥalagaṭun fi sīmilati kifāhi described-it president ministers the-enemy Ishaq Shākir in that-it circle in series struggle

al-filistīnyīn gidda isrā'īl. the-Palestinians against Israel.

(24) nasam, inna-bu kāḏēlika bi al-fi'il, ḥalagaṭun jadīdatun (25) wa lasa mihāyata yes, that-it like this in the-deed, circle new and not end

al-maṣṣāṣī, (26) bidāyatan li marṭalatin jadīdatin min al-nīḍīli lā taqillu guwābatawan wa the-tour, beginning to stage new from the-strife not be less difficult and

kuṭṭūratu wa ḥā'ulā' an al-marḍūhīli al-sābīqāh. (27) wa in kāna al-rāfiqūna mitala hādīhi dangerous and those about the-stages the-previous, and it was the-refusers like this

al-kūṭṭūri muṭti'īna fi maqṣīfihim (28) allaḏī yahādhi bi qubūlin fillisṭīnyīn dībbī the-step mistaken in stand-their which enjoy in acceptance Palestinian semi

ijmā'ī (29) fa inna min ya'taqīdūna bi anna al-nīḍīla qad istahāhu aw iqtarāb min unanimous then that from believe-they in that the-strife veril ended or approached from

al-nīḍāyāh lā yaqillūna kāṭa'an. (30) fa caddūnu-nā mā zāla ẓalifan wa the-end not less-they mistake. because enemy-our what still swagger

muṭagārīsān kānā kāna dā'īmān. arrogant as was always.

(31) bidāyatu marṭalatin jadīdatun taghūna bi fi'ilī ṣanāšīra jadīdatin beginning stage new and victory small achieved in deed elements several

lā ẓakka anna aṭṣama-hā wa ābraza-hā intifādatu ᵉāchibī-nā al-filistīnīyīn fi al-ārādī not doubt that greatest-them and most significant-them uprising people-our the-Palestinian in the-lands

al-muṭḌillāh. (32) fa bidūnī al-intifādah nā kānā li hādī al-ilānī an rāsim. (33) wa the-occupied. so without the-uprising has not was to this the-declaration to complete, and

bidūnī al-intifādah nā kānā li hādī al-ilānī an yaḥdūt (34) wa bidūnī al-intifādah without the-uprising has not was to this the-victory to happen and without the-uprising

mā kānā li ḥādīthi al-farḥātī al-ṣaqarī aṭi takālī ṭawqal al-τaḡāb al-filistīnīyīn has not was to this the-happiness the-small to break chain the-suffering the-Palestinian
Welcome to the State,
Long Live the Uprising

(1) The Palestinian people did not hesitate, in their joy of declaration, to announce their independent Palestinian state. (2) Strange as this verbal expression is, even on the Palestinian ear, it came in one of the final sessions of the Palestinian National Council (3) to awaken the world to the truth that has been forgotten (4) which is the fact that this tortured nation has the right to establish its own independent country on its national territory.

(5) There are a few repeated voices of rejection here and there which have disappeared among the rumbling applause to the independence of Palestine (6) challenging the repressive mechanism of the Zionist occupying forces through the whiz of joy that has broken the skies of Lebanon Camps, and through the expressions of joy which have been reiterated by the Palestinians everywhere and wherever they are. (7) This moment of joy, which is welcomed by the Palestinians came (8) despite the daily loss of martyrs in the occupied Palestinian land, (9) despite the continuing Israeli threat to Palestinian Camps in Southern Lebanon, (10) and despite the iron and silky fists which are still notorious to the Palestinians everywhere.

(11) However, the great Palestinian example was not only in the declaration of a glorious Palestinian moment, (12) rather, it was also in the awareness and the responsibility undertaken by the organization vigilant of the political statement issued by the National Council. (13) Also, the acceptance, from the point of 'the minority surrenders to the majority' and the disregard of alienating and hauling our people in a perpetuity of conflicts, represents a beginning to a new stage of the Palestinian struggle, refraining, once and for all, from the idea of brothers killing one another deciding what is the best way of liberating Palestine.

(14) Undoubtedly, (15) such an example makes the longed for state more acceptable, (16) even by the countries which (17) excuse themselves from supporting it because of the Palestinian divisions and conflicts and the recourse to weapons (18) to resolve their problems. (19) Since without any doubt, (20) this Palestinian joy and national responsibility on the behalf of the organization, is in contradiction to that kind of carelessness America and some Europeans deal with in respect to this declaration (21) which has invalidated most of their excuses and pretenses.

(22) However, Israel has realized the importance of this declaration, (23) which was described by the Israeli Prime Minister, Ishak Shamir, as a series within the overall Palestinian struggle against Israel. (24) Indeed, this struggle is only part of a series in the Palestinian struggle; (25) it is not the end of the matter. (26) It is a start for a new series of struggles which are as complicated and dangerous as the preceding ones. (27) Although the rejection of this step is mistaken, (28) and this is agreed upon unanimously by Palestinians, (29) those who believe that the Palestinian struggle is over are mistaken too, (30) since the enemy is still as arrogant and as conceited as it always was.

(31) It is a beginning for a new stage with a small victory accomplished through many factors amongst which the greatest of all is undoubtedly the Palestinian uprising in the occupied territories. (32) Therefore, without the uprising, the declaration of this Palestinian state would have not been made. (33) Without the uprising, this victory would have not happen, (34) and without the uprising, this little joy would have not been able to break the chain of the Palestinian suffering and seep into their hearts. (35) Welcome to the Palestinian state, long live the uprising.
al-ayāma al-jamīlah
the-days the-beautiful

(1) gādan tabdā'ū fi al-tādīmati al-sīvaṣiriyah al-jawlatu al-‘ūlā fi muḥādatīti al-salāmi
tomorrow start in the-capital the-Swiss the-round the-first in discussions the-peace

al-mubāḥirati bayna al-tirāqi wa Ṭrān bi šārāfi al-umāmi al-muttaṣīda wa
the-direct between the-Iraq and Iran in supervision the-nations the-united and

amīn-hā al-rām kāfiyir di kawāylar. (2) wa lā jāka (3) anna al-mufāṣṣāli
the-secretary-its the-general Khālihar De Cuéllar. and no doubt that the-negotiations

baynā al-baladaṣīni lan takūna yasīrah..(4) wa lan takūna al-turūq muṣḥhadatān
between the-two-countries will not be easy.. and will not be the-roads prepared

amīn-hā wa amīn al-amīn al-tām li al-umāmi al-muttaṣīda.. (5) baḥ rabbāni
before-it and before the-secretary general to the-nations the-united.. but perhaps

takūna al-mufāṣṣālu fi baṣīṭi marāšīl-hā īṣā’ikatan wa muṣqqadāt (6) bi sabbāni
be the-negotiations in some stages-their complicated and complex in cause

min tarāṣṣubūtī ḫarbin (7) istamarrat yāmān sanāwjātī (8) wa ḫalqat bayna al-ṭarāṣayn
from residues war continued eight years and created between the-two-countries

ḥawṣirīna nafṣīyāh wa sīyāṣīyāh, (9) wa tabākat kāfūn kābrītān lādī al-ṭarāṣayn
barriers psychological and political, and left doubts great to the-two-parties

fi naswāyī al-akhir.
in intentions the-other.

(10) lākīna jasbara al-amīr hūnā yataṣallāqu bi al-salām (11) allaḏī yahdīfu
but essence the-latter here belong in the-peace which aim

ilāy-bi al-jamīlī (6) wa allaḏī ṭaṣṣaṣa min ajlī-bī
lit the-all and which danced from sake-its

istīrāq la-bi ṣabīṭu Ṭrān bi labfatān wa taqīn šaddāsūr: (14) hadīḏ al-salām yajibu an
longed to-it people Iran in desire eagerly and eagerness strong: this the-peace must to
yataḥqquqa wa ṭalā ṭawilati al-mufwadāt (15) maḥmū ṭīla anadu-bī.(16) wa maḥmū tarāqqadat achieve and on table the-negotiations whatever lasted period-its. and whatever get complicated

al-musūliku wa al-subul..(17) fa al-ṭarāfūn ṭalāy-ḥumū ṭalā ṭalā ṭalā bi ṭābīti al-nafṣī wa the-ways and means.. then the-two-parties on-them the-enjoy in control the-self and

al-ibṭītīḏī ṭan al-muhātarātī wa al-ittihāahrenheit.. (18) allātī ta‘ti ẓarā daḏā tāḥārīt saḥābītīn min the-get away from the-impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṭaḥnī al-istānī wa al-taḥbānī. .(19) ḥāyu ta‘lībū ḥānu ḥudārā ḥadīr al-bāris the-feed the-media and the-mobilization.. and where play networks the-media role-its the-emerged

zaman al-ḥarb. (20) wa ḥāyu ẓannī al-dīsūṣyāt al-ḥarābīyyah ẓunnī ẓada ẓamīnīh the-get away from the-Impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-da‘ jūlī al-iclīmiyyī wa al-taḥbējīyyī.. (19) ḥāyu ẓaḥ’ābū ajhībatū al-iclīm ḥawwū ẓaḥmī ẓamīnīh the-feud the-media and the-mobilization.. where play networks the-media role-its the-emerged

al-aḥālī al-iclīmiyyī wa al-taḥbējīyyī.. (19) ḥāyu ta‘lībū ajhībatū al-iclīm ḥawwū ẓaḥmī ẓamīnīh the-get away from the-Impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṣawāmil al-muhātarātī wa al-ittihāahrenheit.. (18) allātī ta‘ti ẓarā daḏā tāḥārīt saḥābītīn min the-get away from the-impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṭaḥnī al-istānī wa al-taḥbānī. .(19) ḥāyu ta‘lībū ajhībatū al-iclīm ḥawwū ẓaḥmī ẓamīnīh the-get away from the-Impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṣawāmil al-muhātarātī wa al-ittihāahrenheit.. (18) allātī ta‘ti ẓarā daḏā tāḥārīt saḥābītīn min the-get away from the-impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṭaḥnī al-istānī wa al-taḥbānī. .(19) ḥāyu ta‘lībū ajhībatū al-iclīm ḥawwū ẓaḥmī ẓamīnīh the-get away from the-Impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṣawāmil al-muhātarātī wa al-ittihāahrenheit.. (18) allātī ta‘ti ẓarā daḏā tāḥārīt saḥābītīn min the-get away from the-impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from

al-ṭaḥnī al-istānī wa al-taḥbānī. .(19) ḥāyu ta‘lībū ajhībatū al-iclīm ḥawwū ẓaḥmī ẓamīnīh the-get away from the-Impairments and the-accusations.. which come after eight years from
fi al-tarafayn wa al-ummi al-cam li al-munmi al-muttabidah, dwata baqiyati al-aqthafi in the-two-sides and the-secretary the-general the-nations the-united, call rest the-parties

al-mu'tillati cala miyahi al-kailji wa fi al-marabi al-nihaiyyati li al-mufarajat (32) li al-mu'arakaati the-overlooking on water the-Gulf and in the-stages the-final to the-negotiations to the-participation

fi janihin min-bi fi-wa yata-allahu bi igriri ittifaqin (33) li javani al-ummi wa al-salami in side from-it in-what with regard in acknowledging agreement to ensure the-security and the-peace

fi caunani minaqtati al-kailji (34) wa nazri 'amaniyyati tajaddud ni 'armin ghafratun wa kabirab bi in all region the-Gulf and abandon possibility renewing conflicts small or big in

ayati gharatin min al-yuwar (35) wa tatbi al-salami bayna al-jami cala annin min al-yuwilim any form from the-forms and establish the-relations between the-all on bases from the-laws

al-dawliyyah wa salami tuuni al-jieer wa al-manasaqati al-mushtarakah, (36) wa the-international and relations goodness the-neighboring and the-interest the-joint, and

laqad barhanat al-qiir qiilala sanawati al-gharb san tawqi-bi li al-salami verily proved the-iraq through years the-war about eagerness-its to the-peace

(37) wa cal al-Tran al-taqibru an maqifib-bi min qiilala tawilati al-mufarajat.

and on Iran the-expression about stand-its from through table the-negotiations

(38) laqad istabbar-ni kayran (39) caindaq ajallat muqafaqatu Tran cala al-liti'ani verily were cheerful-we good when overlooked agreement Iran on the-adherence

bi tanfiqib buuudi al-quir 598 (40) wa istabbar-ni kayran wa buuudi in carry out articles the-resolution 598 and were cheerful- we good with emergence

fajri al-eirini min agoosu al-jaari (41) caindaq inta'arat quasuu al-taari al-dawliyyah dawn the-twentieth fm. august the-current when spread forces the-emergency the-international

cala al-hudud bayna al-baladayn al-mutaahiribayn. (42) wa sa nastabirru ka'dalika bi on the-borders between the-two-countries the-fighting., and will we-be cheerful also in

Gabhiin jami (43) caindaq yuaqiqu al-eirini wa Tranu cala ittifaqi al-salami morning beautiful when agree the-iraq and Iran on agreement the-peace

al-nihaiyy.. (44) wa sa yakini ajalun al-aayam buwa al-yauwu allaqy ya'rmun the-final.. and will be most beautiful the-days is-it the-day which prevail
The first round of direct peace discussions between Iraq and Iran starts tomorrow in the Swiss capital under the auspices of the United Nations and the Secretary General Kafyir Perse de cuellar.

Undoubtedly, these negotiations will not be easy for the secretary general of the United Nations and the roads ahead will not be prepared; indeed they well be complicated or even impossible in parts, because of the residues of war which has lasted for eight years and created between these conflicting countries psychological and political barriers and left behind many suspicions within the intentions of the two countries.

However, the essence of the matter here is directed for peace which we are all aiming for, the Iraqi people have waited for for along time, and the Iranian people desire eagerly. This kind of peace must be accomplished on the negotiation table, regardless of how long it takes, and how complicated the methods are. These two countries must therefore be self controlled; they must get away from all accusations and revilement, which come after eight years of mobilization and media feuding. The mass media plays a distinctive role between the two countries, in addition to the professional war propaganda which is dependent upon the shrewdness of the political and military leadership. This is a well-known fact, and so what has been previously delivered and said by the mass media, i.e. declarations of leader, etc. should be disregarded, because all this comes within the shrewdness of propaganda or publicity, and whoever wins propaganda or publicity will win half of the war.

Furthermore, the two countries should, we propose, extend mutual concessions to secure the course of negotiations and to prove good faith and good intentions closing the chapter of the recent past, which does not help in the progress of these negotiations, putting away forever. Also, the two countries and the secretary general for the United Nations should call for the remaining countries concerned to participate in these negotiations regarding an agreement to ensure security and peace in all the Gulf region and avoid any possibility of reviving these small or big conflicts and media propaganda; this is in addition to establishing relations between people on the basis of the international regulations, good neighborly relations and joint interest. All this proves that Iraq has expresses its eagerness for peace, and Iran should also express her stand on the negotiation table.

In fact, we were greatly cheered when Iraq accepts compliance with resolution 598; we were greatly cheered by the daylight hope given on the twentieth of August, when the International Emergency Forces spread out on the borders of the conflicting countries. We will also be very cheerful when a new dawn rises and Iraq and Iran sign the final peace agreement. Finally, it will be the greatest of days when peace prevails in the region and the Palestinian people get back their right to return to their land and establish their independent state.

ft-hi al-salām rubūta al-mintaqah (45) wa yaṣtaʿīdu ʿarba filisṭīna kadālika ḥuqūqa-bu
in-it the-peace parts the-region and restore people Palestine also right-its
fi al-cawdah li ʿarabī-hi wa iqâmati dawlati-hi al-mustaqllah.
in the-return to land-its and establish state-Its the-independent.

The Beautiful Days

(1) The first round of direct peace discussions between Iraq and Iran starts tomorrow in the Swiss capital under the auspices of the United Nations and the Secretary General Kafyir Perse de cuellar.
(2) Undoubtedly, these negotiations will not be easy for the secretary general of the United Nations and the roads ahead will not be prepared; indeed they well be complicated or even impossible in parts, because of the residues of war which has lasted for eight years and created between these conflicting countries psychological and political barriers and left behind many suspicions within the intentions of the two countries.
(10) However, the essence of the matter here is directed for peace which we are all aiming for, the Iraqi people have waited for for along time, and the Iranian people desire eagerly. This kind of peace must be accomplished on the negotiation table, regardless of how long it takes, and how complicated the methods are. These two countries must therefore be self controlled; they must get away from all accusations and revilement, which come after eight years of mobilization and media feuding. The mass media plays a distinctive role between the two countries, in addition to the professional war propaganda which is dependent upon the shrewdness of the political and military leadership. This is a well-known fact, and so what has been previously delivered and said by the mass media, i.e. declarations of leader, etc. should be disregarded, because all this comes within the shrewdness of propaganda or publicity, and whoever wins propaganda or publicity will win half of the war.
(25) Furthermore, the two countries should, we propose, extend mutual concessions to secure the course of negotiations and to prove good faith and good intentions closing the chapter of the recent past, which does not help in the progress of these negotiations, putting away forever. Also, the two countries and the secretary general for the United Nations should call for the remaining countries concerned to participate in these negotiations regarding an agreement to ensure security and peace in all the Gulf region and avoid any possibility of reviving these small or big conflicts and media propaganda; this is in addition to establishing relations between people on the basis of the international regulations, good neighborly relations and joint interest. All this proves that Iraq has expresses its eagerness for peace, and Iran should also express her stand on the negotiation table.
(38) In fact, we were greatly cheered when Iraq accepts compliance with resolution 598; we were greatly cheered by the daylight hope given on the twentieth of August, when the International Emergency Forces spread out on the boards of the conflicting countries. We will also be very cheerful when a new dawn rises and Iraq and Iran sign the final peace agreement. Finally, it will be the greatest of days when peace prevails in the region and the Palestinian people get back their right to return to their land and establish their independent state.

429
al-Ta'lf... beginning the-walk

(1) ḥasan an fa-ālat al-mamlakatu al-rajabiyyatu al-suqūdiyyah (2) ḥūna istaṣāfatu wujūda well did the-kingdom the-Arabia the-Saudi when hosted delegates

al-nuṣūṣuṭi al-aḫrāniyyati al-sōf yatihyyah (3) fa al-waṣqū al-dawliyy wa al-iqāliimy the-negotiations the-Afghan the-Soviet as the-situation the-international and the-regional

aṣbaḥa muḥāḥala al-ṣu (4) li ḥalli bāda al-ṣurūḥ al-mūṣīfī fi kǎṣiraṭi al-muṣliμa nūnūn become qualified the-now to solve this the-wound the-bleeding in waist the-muslims since

nāṣīdīn lārōs bi al-qaṣīr. time not in the-short.

(5) wa ḥī raʾī-nā (6) anna al-waṣqa qad aṣbaḥa muḥāsilīn jīdān (7) nāṣīdīn li al-muṣ qīfī and in opinion-our that the-time verily become suitable very due to to the-stand

al-sōf yatihyyi al-Tājūbiyy wa al-raṣqīṭi al-jāmīḥati lādā al-qiyādati al-sōf yatihyyah (8) lī ḥallī the-Soviet the-positive and the-desire the-refractory to the-leadership the-Soviet to solve

al-wuṣūlīti al-aḫrāniyyah (9) kāmā anna al-waṣqa qad aṣbaḥa muḥāsilīn (10) baʾda an iqṭaṣrat the-problem the-Afghan and that the-time verily become suitable after to be satisfied

jaṣīḥāti al-muṣārādati al-aḫrāniyyah, bi tāṣirī al-ḫiṣārī al-sīyāṣī bīdalān min lugāti al-quwā groups the-opposition the-Afghan, in way the-discussion the-political instead from language the-power

allātī lā tūṣīlū afgānīštān nīsāʾ li mażīdīn min al-dāmārī wa al-kārūb. which not lead Afghanistan except to more from the-destruction and the-ruin.

(11) wa naqāla (12) anna ittīfāqīyyata jīnayv (13) allātī waqqāṣat-hā aṭrāfu al-nisāʾ (12) biya and we-believe that agreement Geneva which signed-it parties the-conflict are

qīṣādatu ḍī baʿṣa bi-bā (14) li al-inṭilāqī nāḥa ḍī ḥallī al-muṣūlīti al-aḫrāniyyah, (15) wa bādā base not bad in-it to the-departure towards solve the-problems the-Afghan, and this

lān yastimā (16) illī ḍī muṣūlītī masāḥīṭu al-muṣliμīn awwalān wa gābalā kullā ḍāʾī gābalā will not be completed only if be put interests the-muslims first and and before every thing before

masāḥīṭi baʾḍi al-quwa al-dawliyyah allātī lā turīdu intihāʾa al-nāṣīf al-aḫrāniyyī. (17) bal interests some the-powers the-international which not want end the-bleeding the-Afghan. but

anna baʾḍa al-ṭarāṣīfi wa tāḥīṣīn ad-dawlīyyat al-arṣīkiyyah tūḥīṣīn an tajwīlān min bāḥībi al-arḍī that some the-parties and specification the-States the-American attempt to make from this the-land

al-islāmīyyah wa gāyīrī al-muṣūlīn mathāna li al-ǧīrī al-dawliyy hāya al-muṣākārān. (18) the-Islamic and not the-biased place to the-conflict the-international the-two-military camps,
wa hiya bi al-ta’kTdl lâ turidu an tarâ insiâbân sofyatiyyan mín afgâniatân (19) wâ lâ turidu
and is-it in the-confirmation not want to see withdrawal Soviet from Afghanistan and not want
haltan silmiyyan (20) li’anna bâdâ yata’qradu wa’q sîyäsatî arâmIka al-iqlTiyyah (21) allatI tarâ
solution peaceful because this contradict with policy America-the-regional which see
fi tawatUri al-wâqî al-dawly amran muñasilban (22) li istlrîrî sîyäsatî al-tasalluh wâ
in tension the-situation the-international matter suitable to continue policy the-arm and
sîyastî al-sîrâ-ûtî al-iqlTiyyah (23) allatI taddfatu al-Šu-Šub al-islâmîyyatU tasmân bâhiIa la-bâ. policy the-conflicts the-
regional which pay the-nations the-Islamic cost expensive to-it.
(24) wâ mín hunû fa inna al-rîzîyata al-suq’dîyyah li hâdîhi al-mubâhâtât jâ’at fî waqti-hâ
and from here then that the-care the-Saudia to these the-discussions came in time-their
wa li gâlihi al-MuslimIn wâ li gâlihi inhâ’i al-tawattur allâqî yûhîtU bi minTaqtatI al-kalTî wâ ûêbbI
and to save the-Muslims and to make the-situation the-tension which surround in region the-Gulf and sub
al-qarratî al-hindîyyah. (25) bâl anna najâba al-suq’dîyyah fî bâl al-sîrâ-ûtî bi al-juqûqi
the-continent the-Indian.
but that success the-Saudia in solving the-conflict in-the-ways
al-silmiyyah wa yaftabu al-bîba wâsitan (26) li tâqâmûna islâmîya wâsitî jîdda al-taduw
the-peaceful will open the-door wide to alliance Islamic wide against the-enemy
the-joint the-represented in the-Andar, and to reduce the-conflicts the-regional between
al-duwâlî al-islâmîyyah wâ qâsatan fî ûêbbI al-qarratî al-hindîyyah.
the-countries the-Islamic and specially in sub-the-continent the-Indian.
(28) inna intïb’ha al-ḥarbl irâqîyyati al-Trâmîyyah wâ inhâ’a al-nazîfî al-aqfâniy sa
emphatic end the-war the-Iraqi the-Iranian and end the-bleeding the-Afghan will
yusî-q الدîhi al-minTaqtah cêlân an tataQafasa (tasaQafasa) al-suq’adî warratan ujra. (29) wâ an
help this the-regions on to breath breathing (al-suq’adî) once another, and to
tubjida Šabâba al-qrâ’bî bi al-qrâ’bî bi al-qrâ’bî bi al-maqhâliyyatî bi al-ţaw’îfîyyah (30)
send away shadow the-wars and the-terrorism and the-conflicts the-belief and the-sectorialism
allahI tâqârsrat mín-hâ al-Şub-Šub al-islâmîyyah (31) wâ lâ taqâmû siwâ maqâliîb a-đâ’î al-tarâbi
which were harmed from-the-nations the-Islamic and not serve except interests enemies the-Árabs
wa al-MuslimIn (32) liqâlîka tatâllatâlu al-ṣuq’adî lâl mâbâhâtîtî al-ţaw’îf (33) bi intîbârîbIa
and the-Muslims to this look forward the-eights to discussions the-Ta’îf in being considered
bidâyanU li mâs’arIn taQilU min al-mubâhâtîtî wa al-ţaw’ârît allatI wâ tu’addî (34) fî bâlî
beginning to walk long from the-discussions and the-talks which will lead in case
mağbî-hâ lâ tâlîmu ûêbbI al-minTaqtah, (36) wâ huwa ûarun mulÎbun wâ
success-its to growth and progress this the-region and is-it matter urgent and
Al-Ta'lf as the Starting Point

(1) Saudi Arabia did very well (2) when it hosted the Soviet-Afghan delegations' discussions, (3) because of the fact that the international and regional climate is now suitable (4) to put an end to the bleeding wound in the side of the Muslims.

(5) We believe (6) that the time now is right (7) considering the latest positive Soviet stand (8) to resolve the Afghan problems. (9) It is also amenable (10) after the conflicting Afghan groups accepted political discussions instead of force which can only lead Afghanistan to more ruin and destruction.

(11) We also believe (12) that the Geneva agreement (13) which the conflicting parties signed, (12) is a fair basis (14) to move towards resolving the Afghan problem, (15) and this will not be accomplished (16) until the interest of Muslims are put first, before the interests of the international forces, the force that does not want an end to Afghanistan's bleeding. (17) However, some of these forces, particularly the United States, is attempting to make out of this fair and Muslims land, a place for international conflicts between the two military camps; (18) it does not want a Soviet withdrawal from Afghanistan; (19) nor a peaceful solution in this region, (20) as this contradicts the regional American policy (21) which sees in the international tension a suitable excuse (22) to continue its armament policies and the policies of regional conflict (23) to which the Islamic nation pays a high price.

(24) Accordingly, Saudi custody to these discussions, came in time for the sake of Muslims' interests, and for the sake of terminating this kind of tension, surrounding the Gulf region and the Indian sub-continent. (25) Through peaceful means, the Saudi success, in resolving this conflict, will open new doors (26) to forge Islamic solidarity against the 'Zionist' enemy (27) and reduce the regional conflicts between the Islamic nations particularly those in the Indian sub-continent.

(28) It should be emphasized that the end of the Iran-Iraq war and the termination of Afghan's hemorrhaging will help this region breath deeply once again, (29) and keep wars of all sorts, i.e. terrorism, regional and extremist conflict, away. (30) These kinds of war are the ones that have damaged the Islamic nations, (31) and indeed served the Zionist enemy.

(32) As a result, we all strive for these discussions (33) to be the beginning of a long course of discussions and talks, which will lead, (34) if successful, (35) to progress in this region. (36) This is in fact an urgent matter (37) to prevent international tension and the danger of huge aircraft carriers with the threat of nuclear and biological war. (38) This will subsequently enable us (39) to invest our resources for the purpose of opening new schools, hospitals, roads and industries for the sake of the Islamic nations instead of fighting one another with costly weapons in non-sensical and useless wars.
(1) لم تكمل تاناه إحتفالات السنة الجديدة (2) حتّى بدأ التعلَّم بعد الانتهاء، <<دعوتي
كل عام>> مجددًا في سنة الجديدة.
(3) أي ما أن يشطح جماعة ليل مما حذام
السلام»، (4) حتّى يبادرن اسماءه في التجليمة العليا لذا مهدد
المسؤول في ذلك، ويدعم إхо في المراكز الأخرى للحد من
يأس على الإصلاح الجديد في العالم، (5) لما بعد
الساهم في سنة 1985 سيكون السنة الجديدة في
السياسي في المنطقة.
(6) <<أنها سنة 1985 ستكون السنة الجديدة
بعد اختيار، وملءها في المعاني والرسائل بين واشنطن
والمغرب وقاهرة وعمان، (7) كلها تتعمد بناء
شام Vij مختل
(8) على رحب ولامع (12) أن تبتعد الحكم من المقاتلين (13) ومما
(9) الملك الباسن الثاني الرغبة في الكود. (10) <<أنه يمكن
الموضوع في المنطقة، (11) وكالة أنباء القاهرة (12) أن تبتعد
في الصراع مع إسرائيل. (13) روابط. (14) أن يدع
(15) بينما
(16) أن يلعب
الاقتصاد في الصراع مع إسرائيل. (17) <<بين أنباء واشنطن
أن مصر ركزت على القاهرة (18) أن يلعب
في السنوات الأخيرة على إسرائيل. (19) أيضا أن يلعب
حيث توجه الوساطة إلى إسرائيل.
(19) va lā naqūnu (20) anna qirā`as-tan mata`-anniyatan fi bāghī bi al-taqřihātī wa al-māšíyātī
and not we-believe that reading slow in these the-declarations and the-information
taqīfū jadīdan li al-mawājīfī al-mu-lūbān bi intīna`ī dīlīka al-ḥasāsī al-nadīrī li al-ḥall
add new to the-stands the-declared in except that the-sealessness the-rare to the-solution
al-sāfīkiy wa al-ḥalāsh min al-qaḍātī al-filistīnīyāh bi ayyī ta`ammān, wa kīlīn al-cūm
the-american and the-get rid from the-issue the-Palestinian in any cost, and during the-year
al-ḥallīfū al-cūm abadī taqūrī, (21) wa lāniyōn al-wadāqīliyata al-ḥaqīqiyata fi bāghī <al-tarūqūrī
the-current on forbest estimate, and but the-problem the-real in these "the-presentations
al-siyyāshiyātī"> (22) anna-bāh lā takīfīfū min ḥāyū al-mabda` wa-ra ta`ahā al-sūdāt qabla
that-they not differ from way the-principle with what presented the-Sadat before
kāb dayvid, (23) wa lān takīfū min ḥāyū al-matijāh līlā mā waqālā lay-šī kāb dayvid, (24) wa
Camp David, and
hiyā al-kurūjū bi ṣaqātīn muṣnārīdatīn al-zāmī bi al-qaḍīyyātī al-qaṣābīyya <tāsātīn wa al-żarbī
are the-derailent in deal separate on account the-issue the-national general and the-people
al-filistīnīyū ḫāṣḥah.
the-Palestinian special.

(25) wa līgī kūnā min al-arabī iṣfārū ḥusāsin al-cūm ayyī musādāratīn lam tut-li, (26) illā
and if was from the-difficult issuing judgement on any initiative has not declared, except
anna-sā nāt-qīdū (27) anna ayya musādāratīn asfālkiyātīn jadīdāh lūbbāda wa an tuṭālīqā min
that-we believe that any initiative American new must and to come out from
muṣādāratī rayqān- (28) id laq yuṭaṣ līya`u-bī - nasān wa rībān. (29) wa
initiative Reagan- if has not repeat reviving-it-letter and spirit. and
bi al-ši`lī laq tuqaddīmī al-muṣqūtū al-munṣaqṭūtī lī al-żarbī al-filistīnīyū ṣāy`ān
in the-last will not present the-copy the-scrutinized to the-people the-Palestinian thing
yuqār, (30) al-ḥumās, mā kālī al-jadāla al-bīnātīnīyū ṣāyya al-filistīnīyīna afūsī-him
mentioned, except, what except the-argumentation Byzantine between the-Palestinians selves-them
va al-tawwūqīn al-arabīyātīn.
and the-capitals the-Arab.

(31) fa al-qaḍīyyata fi ra`yi-sā biyā (32) anna al-waṣāyātī al-muttaḥīdah al-asfālkiyāh
so the-issue in opinion-our is that the-States the-United the-american
gayrī mu’āshhālatīn an tal`-ahā davra al-ḥaṣāl wa al-ḥakmī wa waqtīn wabi. (33) wa laq yaṣbaq
not qualified to play role the-opponent and the-judge in time one. and has not precede
fi al-Ḡurīk an laq-ibbīt dawlatun mtīlā hūḏū al-dawr. (34) wa laq yuṣud al-ixiyāzu al-asfālkiy
in the-history to played country like this the-role. as has not remain the-bias the-american
li ỉal`ī mu`jjadda maṣīfī <al-qaḍīyya min al-qaḍī> (35) wa laṣāh bīta tabīlūfar nakṣīlūn fi
to Israel just stand "the-friend from the-friend" and but become alliance obvious in
The Decisive Year

(1) Just before the end of the New Year celebrations (2) the resounding of "peace propagandists" started to echo in the Middle East world. (3) As soon as a declaration was issued by this or that leader, (4) its echo started to spread out in other capitals so that the observer may wonder about this kind of political coordination.

(5) At a time when the former Austrian consultant, the mysterious mediator between the PLO and Israel, announced (6) that 1985 will be a decisive year in the Middle East, (7) harmonized and coordinated ideas and declarations leaked out yesterday between Washington and Ribat, Cairo and Amman. (8) All this is part of a well-planned scenario to establish peaceful solutions in the region. (9) For example, King Hassan, the second, wishes the Arabs (10) "to be more practical (11) and the PLO (12) to form a state in exile. (13) It should not be forgotten (14) that there might be a war between the Arabs and Israel. (15) However, news from Washington indicates that Egypt informed the United States (17) "that the situation is now suitable for a new American peace initiative (18) in order to resolve the Arab-Israeli conflict.

(19) We do not think (20) that a careful reading of all these declarations and announcements will add anything new to the declared points of view except to offer that kind of rare enthusiasm to the American solution and to extricate the Palestinian issue by any means or cost in this current year. (21) However, the real problem of these initiatives, (22) is that they do not differ, in principle, from those initiated by the Egyptian former president, Sadat, before Camp David; (23) they will not be different in their outcome from that of Camp David, (24) and that is the derailment of a detached bargain on the expense of the national cause in general and the Palestinian people in particular.

(25) Even if it is difficult to make judgements on undeclared initiatives, (26) we do believe (27) that any new American initiative must start from Reagan's initiative, (28) if not repeating it verbatimly. (29) Therefore, this revised bargain will not present anything new to the Palestinians (30) except non-sensical disputes among the Palestinians themselves and other Arab capitals.

(31) The point from our own perspective (32) is that the United States of America is not capable of playing the role of the enemy and the judge simultaneously. (33) Throughout history, this has never been achieved, (34) because American bias towards Israel is not just that of a friend towards a friend, (35) but it becomes an obvious alliance in strategic objectives against the national perspectives of the Arab nations. (36) We do not think in fact that, (37) Frayski is mistaken, (38) when he says (39) with regard to the weakness of the Israeli stand, that the Israeli budget is becoming part of the American budget".

(40) One wonders, (41) if these are the celebrations at the beginning of the New Year, (42) what will the celebrations be like at the end of this year?
الزيارة الأولى والحقائق البRIGHT

(1) في اليوم السابق زيارة السيد السيد العلامة الأعلى أهل الدين في الحقيقة نهضت القادة الذين جمعناهم في القصر الرئيسي في البلاد.

(2) وفي اليوم التالي زار السيد السيد العلامة الأعلى أهل الدين و.']

(3) في إحدى النقاط من القوة الفائقة، إذا كانت من مسؤوليات البلاد من حيث التحقق من هذا الموقع، فإن القيام بهذا التحقيق في هذا الصرحاء

(4) فإن ذلك ما جرى من حوار بين البهاء من القوة الفائقة والأخوة الذين استسلموا من الأفراد الذين يشتركون في القوة الفائقة.

(5) كان ذلك لجوابه على الأخوة الذين قاموا من الأفراد الذين يشتركون في القوة الفائقة.

(6) في البلاد التي يعيش فيها الأمة، لا يمكن أن يلعب الأعداء أي دور.

(7) لا يمكن للقومية أن تتخلى عن العفو في أي موضع.

(8) ولكن في نوبه، فإنها تبني على القوة المطلقة، وهي تهدد بالمقاومة في جميع أنحاء البلاد.

(9) ويشتكي الأمة من الاحتلال السريع إلى المنطقة من الحرب الإقليمية الدестuctive إلى دوري الثمانية.

(10) تمكن من القيام بشكل غير عادي من التوجيه السريع إلى البحر في البحر وهي لا تزال تواجه بعض الصعوبات.

(11) وبالنسبة للكويت، فإن السعادة النتائج الخاصة بالساحة في الحرب الإقليمية الدестuctive إلى دوري الثمانية.

(12) في السنوات الأخيرة، كان من الممكن البدء في التوجيه السريع إلى البحر في البحر وهي لا تزال تواجه بعض الصعوبات.

436
(10) inna al-idara al-qawlyyah yajibu an tasira fi al-quwwat emphatic the administration the-strong must to go in line balanced with building the-forces
al-musallahah, (11) fa kilaa-hum wa ana'ihi an yanhiya al-bilad wa yaquna anna-ha the-armed, as each-them from sake-its to protect the-country and maintain security-its
wa ya'afa istiqara-ha.
and keep stability-its.

(12) wa fi ghil baada al-faham (13) fa inna Jahira al-abada kaua madan inaad akkada
and in light this the-understanding then that Jabir the-Ahmed was clear when confirmed
ahamiyyata taqaddl al-quwwati al-musallahah al-iusallahah, (11) Ia ki1-hum a'ni-hla an yahmiya al-bilad wa yahfaza istiqrara-ha.
the-armed, the country and maintain security-its and keep stability-Its.

(14) wa ahamiyyata i'tadati al-naaari fi hamamiyati importance enhancing the-forces the-armed and importance repeat the-look in capabilities
these the-forces the-armed, in way be the- armour the-protective to the-Kuwait.

(16) wa ta'kda ilaa sabil al-quwati al-musalleb al-iusallahah, (15) bI haytu takinu al-dir ca the-armour the-protective to the-kuwait.
and in light this the-understanding then that Jabir the-Ahmed was clear when confirmed
ahamiyyata taqaddl al-quwwati al-musallahah al-iusallahah, (11) Ia ki1-hum a'ni-hla an yahmiya al-bilad wa yahfaza istiqrara-ha.
the-armed, the country and maintain security-its and keep stability-Its.

(17) lakinna khoja layna siwa ju'lihna saa al-cawiyt al-kawiyt al-kabira, (18) wa hiya humma
but this not except part small from worries the-Kuwait the-large, and are-they worries
tasamalu al-qalama al-tallat wa duwala 'ada wali al-ihibiyin wa duwala al-islami al-ilhamiy
include the-world the-third and countries con the-aligned and countries the-world the-Islamic
wa al-wataan al-carabbiyib al-kabir. wa if al-qalbi min-bu fillisfn.
and-the-country the-Arab the-large. and in the-heart from-it Palestine.

(18) wa qas fillisfn qala sahibu al-sumuw wa qalahu (20) li yula'hi akhbar wa aqada
and about Palestine said owner the-highness what said-he to summarize biggest and most complex
mis'atin ismaiyyah fi al-qarni al-carabiyy.
tragedy husun in the-century the-twentieth.

(19) qala buna al-sumuw (22) anna al-maalma al-carab (23) law tamil'-u bi jiddin wa mutabarab
said highness-his that the-responsibles the-Arab if worked-they in seriousness and perseverance
wa sadag'-u fi wu'mi-him (24) latamarratat fillisfnu al-mustaqillah musqal zaman.
and said the truth-they in promises-their liberated Palestine the-independent since time.

(21) wa mitlu khoja al-badil yaitaha jirhan kaftaah. wa yubruhu ilu al-sathb haquiqa kaftarah
and like this the-speech open wounds many. and bring out to the-surface truths many
The Fair's Visit and the Plain Truth

(1) His Highness, Prince Jabir Al-Ahmad, yesterday visited the two air bases of Ali Al-Salem and Ahmad Al-Jabir (2) where he met senior officers of the armed forces.

(3) It was natural for His Highness to make such a visit to inspect the important sector of the state, (4) and what was mentioned in his speech, (5) addressed to the senior officers, (4) was a reflection of his understanding of the sources of Kuwait's power and strength by which it maintains sovereignty and protection against covetous enemies. (6) This good country does not want to do harm to others, (7) but at the same time, it does not want to be harmed from others. (8) This observation may have special significance in the light of the plain truth (9) that Kuwait has lived hazardously for eight years on the edge of regional wars during which it has maintained the leadership of this country under the continuous barrage of artillery and machine guns.

(10) It must be understood that the national administration of this country must go in line with the armed forces (11) because both of them aim at protecting the country and maintaining its security and stability. (12) Along this kind of understanding, (13) His Highness, Jabir Al-Ahmad, clearly spelt out the importance of strengthening the armed forces, (14) and the importance of re-examining the capabilities of these forces (15) in such a way that they become the protecting armor of Kuwait, (16) and at the same time, affirming Kuwait's commitment toward its (sister) Arab countries.

(17) However, these matters are only a small part of Kuwait's worries; (18) which include the third world countries, the non-aligned states, the Islamic and Arab countries and Palestine at the centre of all this.

(19) His highness elaborated on Palestine (20) to summarize the most complicated human tragedy of the twentieth century. (21) His Highness said, (22) that if the responsible Arab leaders, (23) had seriously consolidated, (24) Palestine could have been liberated a long time ago.

(25) This kind of speech brings many wounds to the surface; (26) however, the issue of these wounds is that the danger of Israel does not only threaten Palestine, (27) but rather, it threatens the Islamic and Arab world. (28) If one half of knowing the truth is to recognize the Israeli threat, (29) then the other half is in our preparation for it (30) and to surmount our negative attitudes. (31) This is, in fact, the essence of His Highness' speech.
THE INDEPENDENT
40 CITY ROAD, LONDON EC1Y 2B (telephone 01-253-1222; telex 9419611 INDPNT)

Hurd makes a cautious start

DOUGLAS HURD'S two speeches on Europe in the past two days may well attract less attention in the British press than his forthcoming visit to Hong Kong. They deserve at least as much. For the Foreign Secretary is beginning to map out, cautiously yet not without an eye on the more distant horizons, how Britain sees no less a subject than the future of a Europe that has been transformed by the political upheaval in the East.

Speaking in Oxfordshire on Monday, Mr Hurd committed the British Government to the principle of making "a strenuous and imaginative response to the extraordinary effort which is being made by the peoples of Eastern Europe". And he was right to emphasise the ways in which many different kinds of individual British people can help. He mentioned bankers, parliamentarians, English teachers, even journalists. Another need will be for environmental scientists and experts of many kinds as Eastern Europe tackles the appalling damage done by reckless forced industrialisation under Stalinism.

But in terms of political arrangements, Mr Hurd went no farther in his first speech than to suggest that the East European nations should be invited to join the Council of Europe. That does not go very far.

Yesterday, to a mixed gathering of members of the US Congress and the European Parliament in London Mr Hurd went further. For a start, he put the future of Eastern Europe in the context of the developing European Community. He rightly said that events in the East presented the EC with its greatest opportunity. And while he conceded that nothing must hold up the timetable for European integration by 1992, he insisted that Europe cannot go on as if nothing had happened. He even wheeled out the European Free Trade Association, that relic of the timidity of a previous generation of British politicians. Never mind: Mr Hurd has begun to confront the political and institutional task of making Eastern Europe ready to join the West, and of equipping Western Europe to help the East.

He has not, however, gone far enough. The long-term goal of the East Europeans is clear enough. They want to rejoin Europe. Eventually, they have made it clear, that will mean their wanting to join the European Community. They will not settle for second class citizenship. With the significant exception of East Germany, none of them is yet even close to being ready to do so. But the question is not whether we will let them join the club we have only just made up our own mind to join. Apart from anything else, the imagination of our European partners is fired by the challenge of finding ways to expand the Community. The question is how best to prepare the East European nations, politically and economically, for eventual membership. It is vital that the help Britain and other Western European countries give should be fully co-ordinated in the European context, as part of a European strategy.

That can be done, of course, only if all the European partners together confront three major interlocking issues on which Britain is well-placed to give leadership. The first is precisely the question of how the Community can expand to include the East European nations when they are ready. The second is the question of Germany and the ending of the post-1945 great power settlement there. And the third is the over-arching question of security. On all these great questions, Mr Hurd should spell out the Government's position clearly and soon, beginning perhaps when he visits East Berlin in a fortnight's time. He will be listened to with all the more attention because of the lead he has already begun to give.
ผลกระทبو الانفجار

أكد الرئيس حسن مراد في مؤتمر الدعوة إلى الحسن الذي يهدد المجتمع
المصرى ثلاثي التجربة: التطرف والمهرة والانفجار السكاني، وهو أمر
يمكن مع استفادة أن يؤدي بمستقبل البلاد بما في ذلكه من عوائق
وخلقات هي على التطور الإداري والإبداع والخبر.

والأوقات أن الانفجار السكاني يمكن أن يكون نوراً لكل المشاكل عبر
سلسلة من ردود الفعل كل منها يحمل نور الخطر في حد ذاته. فهو يؤدي
مع غياب الخطط التنموية ومصير القضايا وناقش الأدلة الفعلية التي
ما بنية القول الذي يĐT قائل المجتمع، فهو يزيد البساطة وتبور
التشوب ويشوع الفساد، وهيها ألقى يثقوم بها التطرف في جنوبه.

النفخ الأدهم الناجب عن تحريف المجتمع واللازوم بالكشف الغز في
والعذب المخدرات المتتأمرين أيضاً عن الناس من المجتمع والتأكيد على
التمييز.

وزيادة السكان في حد ذاتها عام بيجاى من عوامل القضاء في قوة
الدولة. فالسكان البشري يذكى يكون أهم مصدر التدمير إذا لم يتم اتباعه
في استغلال سائر المواد الطبيعية بل العمل التقدم أو على إيجاد موارد
استدامة محكمة، وهو الأساس في دفع سائر المواد تتكون مراكز حقيقية
المؤجزة مثل حالة الأرض وكميتها من الموارد المعدنية الزراعية،
والمهمة الاستراتيجية والتجارب بتفكيك الاستبلاكات والتصدير، والقرارات
المدنية والطبية. بل أن الاعتدال الشري في انجاز
المنمو في الحفار السياسي والاجتماعي والحاسبة عامة.
لكنه يتطلب ضرورة إلى إجمال أ电磁 و تقديم مظلة إذا
انهار دون ضرورات تتناسب مع مهارات الإنسان في سائر المجالات، بل
تصبح بعيدة المنظور عادة متقاطعة على ما يذكر التجمع
ورؤوس مقربة تؤدي إلى الإنصاف والتفرد والانتفاخ هو كل
أهداف القدوم على استقلال الموارد الجوية والاجتماعية وشيوط
الانحلال في المجاو التقليدية.

وعليما تقارب الأوضاع لسبب شني، فلابد من أن نتعم الأصولات،
مشكل وعلاجات في مهارته النجاحي، إذ إن يكون من المفيد أن تكون كلا الجهد
والعمل في مجالات التأهيل تأتي الزيادات السكانية تكتمل الموارد أو
وتبور وتحلي الحصاد إلى ما هو أصوأ. عليه يكون الشرع المباشر
بفتحها بطرق في البحر.

وأي كل ما ينجز السكان على ذلك العوج هو التحدي الأكبر لعقول
قدمة، فإن العجز عن معالجته يؤدي بالضرورة إلى العم في مواجهة شائر
التحديات حتى وإن كنا، يعترفين في التحدي لها.
لا يمكنني قراءة النص العربي من الصورة.
رأى الاهرام

الإتحاد التجميع

تبدأ غداً في عمان المحافذات الرباعية لرؤساء وزراء دول التجمع الاقتصادي الجديد، مصر والأردن والعراق واليمن الشمالي، تحديد الأطر تنفيذية للجتمع تهديدًا لمؤتمر القمة الرباعي الذي يعقد بهدف إعداد

واختيار الشؤون المالية.

ورغم أن التجمع الاقتصادي المعامل، من أجل تحقيق درجة أكبر من التكامل، إلا أن أنشطة كبار الحزام في القمة على أعلى مستوى، ومن ثم فإن منظمات السياسة تشير بالضرورة إلى زيادة في العمل الوقائي المشترك الذي تبنته الإرادة السياسية بما تأخده من سبلات المنظمة الداخلية

لل裨ادرة لحقيقين أهداف استراتيجيًا على.

ومما لاشك فيه أن التجمع هو تحريقي عن تقسيمات شعب الدول المشتركة في مشاركتها في أثر الأفضل بعد رؤى شطر كبير من أجزاء مضامن وردية خارجية. ولتكون كذلك أداة تفاعل جديدة مع تكوينات الاقتصاد في أوروبا وأمريكا، ومدحها كيفية التطورات السلام الداخلية في المنطقة وما نجده من تطورات العدل البديل وتشريع من أجل تحقيق أفضلياتًا وسط سلاسل الحياة.

فما بقي من هذا القرن، والآب، القرن القادم.

وتنحن الدول الأربعة معاً بشرية وطبيعية وعائمة هائلة تجعل السياق مفاهيم أمانها لحقيقين اitched من التكامل في مشروعات جامعية وقaptive. بالإضافة إلى مشروعات قادرة عاليا كالإعانات العسكرية والدعم والتطوير القانوني. وهذه المشروعات نحن، إنها مشاركة تقتضي كبرى الاستخدامات في زمن أو برامج العمل وحرص

التحدي. هذا ما تنبهته من اختلافات التنافس في العالم الخارجي.

وحقق شروط الأفضل في التشكيل التجاري، وحصن ما ورائهما المفوق،

وتكسب قوة وفعاله أيضًا في التأثير السياسي لصالح القضايا العالمية.

ويمد التجمع أوثقًا من الفضول والضياعات المنتظمة التي

طلبت قيامه أولاً محتوى دون إمكان أو أساس أو أزمة حقيقية،

بهمية أهدافه اتجاه ليس فتاحة ولم بات هو من فتاحة وهو بعد

أيضا استدام لخطوط التجدم العربي وتشريعه قادرة، أو الواردة.

وكان شريكاً في أطرافه العربي، أو يمكن فكرة وغالباً شروط المجموعة الكبيرة. كما أنه ليس هكلاً

شريكاً في أطرافه العربي، أو يمكن فكرة وغالباً شروط المجموعة الكبيرة. كما أنه ليس هكلاً

الذي ي tồnب عدد إلى إمكانية التحزم العربي في كثير المبادرات. مما

يمد صورة أفضل ومصداقية أكبر لدى القدرة العربية على التفاعل مع

مستجدات العصر، واستشراف أفكار المستقبلي.
وايز الإكيد - 1989

مكاسبات الجامعة

للتعرف على أحدث تطورات العالم، تخلصت الجامعة العربية في الدار البيضاء، وقد تعمل على جعل الجامعة قد تكون أكثر الفعالية في مجال الاستدامة في سياق العالم العربي.

ومع ذلك، فإن القضايا تتعلق باللغة، فإنها قامت بكد، وفقًا لمناقشات سابقة حاولت جمعية العرب في مدينة فيضان.

ولقد ضمت القضايا الأخرى بقيادة الإطار السياسي في إطار الانتشار.

فضلاً المكاسبة الكاملة في تدوم الموضوعات الكلامية، لأن الرئيس يدرك أن هذه المكاسبة دائماً في معرفة أولوبي التي تهم شعوب مصر خارجياً.

والواقع أن هذه المكاسبة في التفاعل مع كافة اللغات العربية ينبغي أن يكون على الساحة العامة للدول العربية في تغييراتها.

وأوضحها مستمرة، وأن يكون ما يحدث في اللغة القوية لها من بعد إذ أن المكاسبة في حد ذاتها هي السبيل الوحيد لبناء المواضيع المشتركة على أسس موضوعية لا تزال فيها ملاصقة للعقول أو ضوضاء الواقع. يجب بالضرورة أن تكون أو تكون

نفسها، سواء كانت حقيقة أو افتراضية، ولا يمكن أن تكون على سبيل المثال، لا يمكن أن تكون على سبيل

الإتفاق أو التسبب بما يلقى أولاً من القلق أو التعبير عن أو التعبير عن

من خلال وسائل الوسائل المختلفة، المثلاً إذا وردت في هذه المكاسبة يمكن أن تكون أقوى، أو التعبير عن، الحقيقة أو العلمانية مثل الحقيقة، أو التعبير عن، الحقيقة أو العلمانية مثل الحقيقة، أو التعبير عن

والأمل والشغف، وهنا الجدوى أن تحدث مفيدة، حتى وإن بحثنا

دمجها، على أية حال، في استخدامها مع وجود البساط أو مستمر، ووجوهها دون

سمى إلى إخبارها قد يختلف طارئًا لبعض الحقائق الباطن، ومن ثم لا يكون

فعلاً أو مؤراً.

وحل في أنتظار سلامة للعمل العربي وشأوه على ذلك، حيث لم يكن

بعض البيانات المشتركة تتعلق ذكر، إذ أن المكاسبة والاكتشاف في الدنيا

كما تظهر في حالة الجامعة بعدد غير قادر للحمل، كما جربنا عن حركة الشعوب العربية،

وأوبر على الإحراز والحيوية، وكثيراً ما تأتي من التي تلقىها هناك في أنتظار الاضطراب والوحدة الحقيقة في تبادل الأفكار، والتفاعل بين الأقوال،

الحقائق، حيث تجتمع الأفكار تجنط لإحلال، والإفصاح دالة على الأفكار،

والمراسلة من جمجمة الشفافية.
توثقت الأنباء مؤخرًا عن مشروع أمريكي في طور البتولة لدفع الحركة في قضية الشرق الأوسط، ليقوم وزير الخارجية، جورج بوش، بطرحها خلال لقاء الإذاعة على متن مهندسي الإمبراطور الياباني، الأحماض السامة، وذلك لاستناد الرأي الأول توسيع نقاط الأسلحة للجيش، بسبب اختلاف الأطراف.

وأما عن مجريات المشروع الذي تشير إلى مرحلة الإعدادية للإشارة إلى إسرائيل، فإنها حوارت عن عناصر نفستينية من الحلفاء، وترجمة ملحة مدنية التحرير وتوقف على إجراء الحوار، مع تنازل أى عدد من المسؤولين الإسرائيليين وتأخر عرقلات في المؤتمر الدولي للسلام رغم تجربة هذه المفاوضات.

وبعض الاعتقاد عن طبيعة المشروع نفسه، فإنه يبدو إعلانًا عن عنوان الحكومة الأمريكية الجديدة في المشاركة الكبيرة في مقررات حل القضايا، وذلك في إطار سبايتش، مشهد تشيد المسؤولية الدولية عن عدة أطراف خارجية ذات أثاث جاذبة، بالإضافة إلى الاحتكار العلاني الذي يبحث عن المصالح في هذا الخبرة خسارة وعبء على الإطراف المعنية.

وبالنظرة من النظرة، يبرز نفس حريص، عني الإخراج الأمريكي، مزيد من الحادثة والطريق على نحو بيان، عن وشيك شبه تقليد عن الأسلحة، بغض النظر عن مستقبلات الخلافات ابتعاثًا أو شديدة، إيجازًا للتبادل الإسرائيل، في مواجهة إدارات إيجابية. قد أعلن أن أي عدم هذه الاتفاقية، فعلاً أوزار خارجية للمجموعة الأمريكية خلال زيارة الأخيرة لدول حلف الناشف، حيث قد نما الانتقادات في أي تحرك خاص به، وعدم تقبل سيطرة جيدة، قبل أن يتلقى الرئيس مبارك، وزرائه مع الدكتور عيسى عبد الجليل لواشئت، ثم إيطالته لاستئصال السامير بعد ذلك.

ولم يكن التحويل بطرف الأمركي، بمجرد ما يبدو للهجوم الأوروبي، بل ردًا لما على ما عرضته رؤية الخلافية على بيك من تنازل، سريعة نساطها إلى النظرة الثالثة في جوانبهم الأثرية المتشابهة. الأمر الذي انتهى مشاهدها، بعد قنوات عزيز خارجية، هولندا، إلا أن الإفتراض قد جعل الغالبية ببدأت جدلًا تزود إقفال جميع في الموقف، وهذا يؤكد أن أمريكا ترى من هذه أن تبدأ في الإجابة تنظيمها الخاص في المشكلة. لكنها لن تردد في الإجابة بالإطارات، وقد يتجوز الأمركي، فرص تأديب موفق فيه طلبه بإجابة الخروج الأوروبي من ضرورة أمية هو، ضبحاً بإزالة للمنتظمة في أسرع وقت ممكن، كما فعل سلفه شوتلر. أما عن كيف يطرح إلغاء من السابق لتأتي بفصل تلاقيًا، لا يدام بعد وضعه في الصعوبة النهائية. لذا الإجابة الحالية على عقد أوباما الدولي وسرقة أجزاء الإصابات التي تشير ذلك قد تجعل من المسألة أكثر مصداقية بالحال، ونقطة الحوار الإسرائيل، وكذلك داخل وتقديم الآثار المتأخرة مع المنظمة ذاتها ما بعد القيادات الداخلية، كما أمرّه كله لها.
معارك الشيعة .. وأعداء الآخرين !

ما الذي تريده مليشيات الشيعة المصحدرة في لبنان من استقرار هذه الموارد غير المعروفة التي تهدد بشام نظام الحلفاء الإسلامي؟ إذن .. هل يمكن أن يصدق أحد أن هذه الممارسات تتعدى عن مواطنين تشتكون بزور الذهب لوطنهما ؟ إن هذه المعارك تجبر تأكدًا، لأنها أنفع وتعززRails.co.uk ودعم الانتداب عن جانب этих الميليشيات للمملكة العربية المتحدة لزيد.

إذاً هذا البلد أن يستمر عالمه وإنه يخفق أسفاؤه.

هذه كانت استالة فرض نفسها بعد سلسلة الحريق الشريسة التي دارت خلال الأيام الماضية بين مليشيات الشيعة الموارنة ليبان والذين يطلقون على إنهم اسم حرث الله ولملوديات الشيعة الموارنة بسورية والذين يطلقون على إنهم اسم حرث الله، أمر، من أجل الاستيلاء على الضواحي الجنوبية ليبون.

إن هذه المعارك تجبر، وجود مخطط خبيث يستهدف من وسلامة واستقرار لبنان وتشفى في طرق المجال الحلفاء القبلية لكيم من ديفال وطبر لاتد إلى الالم الابرو زروق تتفاوت عمري بينهما ليا تليتر والتعلو الملل، الأثنين. افتشت كنثة من سرح إهداء الشرق الأوسط بشكل عام.

والمثل لبنان على يهك الخصوص. في اعتقادنا أن هذه الحروب أنها أن تكون بمثل هذه جروب، افتنغ يوظف الحلفاء الوطن للشيء، الشريعة إلى شرق دون أباع من أجل سيطرة هذا المخطط الجنائي الذي يستهدف تحول لبنان إلى قبالة موقعة دامرة، الإ(brت. للعالم العربي يؤدي الدور المستنفرذها المؤثرة في ذلك الإتعار بما يعوض له كل من ديفال وطبر على المعالي القوية العليا للعربية.

إذاً هذا استتانغ أن يتكرر أن مليشيات الموارنة بسورية تمثل رأس جزء لها مثل مليشيات حرب الله رأس حربة ليبان وكمالا يملأ أنتسابه من حرب لبنان وينسي صور المقاومة الوطنية الشريعة في الجنوب غرب الوجود الإبراز من ابتكار وثبت أنتساب يتوج في جوهر الإبراز الإبراز الإبراز الإبراز الإبراز. تستنفرذها الملحنةpartition. البترول، ين ذرح هذه المليشيات.

وأداه كان مليشيات أصل تنبين الوجود السوري في لبنان من أجل مطلقة خليفة وتحقيق حلم سوري أكبر. فإن مليشيات حرب الله تريب ماهر أحتر من ذلك إنها تسيعي أي تحليل ليبان يكتمل أي مجاهدة إبرازية يمكن استخدم كاعدة كقاعدة للرد الإبرازية من دلالاتها.

وعدها فإن هذه المليشيات الجوية تسهم في عالم عن ردوان. إنهية لبنان لكن يكون لفة سانحة في تطريز الناشرين وما أكدهم .. ولكن معلوم أن إسرائيل لم تستطع بعد عن هؤلاء في لبنان ومارسوا احتفاظ برأس قصر دانين يقصي الحجارة الأم في البون .. فهو سباقون من مشاهد أن تلقائون .. هذا هو السؤال.
لا يوجد نص يمكن قراءته بشكل طبيعي من الصورة المقدمة.
الاردن .. على العهد

في حديث الحسن، الذي بثه الهيئة الإذاعية البريطانية، أشار أحد الجلالة على أن العلاقة الأردنية الفلسطينية مهمة، وخاصة وأن الأردن في جميع الأحوال لم يخلع عن أبناء فلسطين ولن يرحل عنه كأن الخلية الوظيفية، وجاء في هذا الحديث تعبيراً عن التأسيس السلمي للانضمام، وهي تدخل عامها الثاني وفجأة عقل مشروعيتها. ودعا للضياء العالمي لترجمة تعاونهم بها. الأعمال يعجل

عقد المؤتمر الدولي لتسليط الضوء الحقيقي، الذي يعجل في السلام والاستقرار إلى المنطقة.

وآخر الحديث، أن ينجب مجدداً أن السياحة الناشئة في المنطقة لا يهددها وحدها. وأنها يهدد السلام العالمي، وكان جلالته قد وجه التحذير ذاته، غير مرة، خلال الاجتماعات التي التم بها، من قبل أن عدد من الصحف والإذاعات.

ثبات التنافس الدولي في البلاد.

وعتني عن القول، إن هذا كله هو تحدي للالتزام القومي الذي يملكه الأردن ..، الذي يأخذ مداه من خلال تنمية الأجزاء العربية، والمملكة من خلال الأعمال العربية على تحدياته. وقد تبدو هذا العمل واضحًا ما يكون في

السعي الذي يقوم به جلالته، لإقامة كيان عربي يضم الدول العربية شرق البحر المتوسط ..، الذي من شأنه أن ينظم ولوجية الشرقية ويتيح للعرب أن يمارسوا الخيارات المناسبة لاستعادة حقوقهم وأرسط الأساليب وال🎉 في محتلهم.

وهذا، دخل التأسيس للانضمام الذي يمارسه الحسن، طورًا جديدًا، يمثل في تأهيل الفئة الإذاعية العربية، لتكوين أنظمة، التي يحظى بها، إذا مجموعة. ولكن يكون الحسن، قد أدى الإذاعة، وهي تدخل عامها الثاني جدًا مميزًا في هذا الإنجاز.

لقد حمل الوقت، ليقدم التأسيس العربي للانضمام على المستوى الجديد المثلى ..، وهو المستوى الذي يحرص الأردن على تحقيقه، وسعت في سبيله، وفي سبيل منتج الأعمال العربي مؤصدرين موجبة النتائج من إقامة الكيان القومي الذي يدعو الحسن لببر.
الجريمة الصغيرة
والجريمة الكبيرة

تأتي مناقشة مجلس الأمن الدولي لأساطير الطائرة الإيرانية
فرضة أخرى للكي وقف الجماع مع مشاركين منها مشاركتهم
ويهدد النواحي التي كانت وراء إنشاء هيئة الأمم
المتحدة كلها. فإذا كان أسفاط الولايات المتحدة
مجردة جريمة تستحق التحديد والأندية فإن ما يجب أن
يشار إليه ويؤكد عليه أن النظام الإيراني أسهم
في سلسلة ممارساته. وفي صقله وعنده. في أصاله نهاية
استمرار الحرب في التعقيد جريمة أسفاط الطائرة.
وإلى أثر chat 3600 المتطلبة، ويمكن أن تشير هذا إلى
هيئة مكة في موسم الحج الماضي وأعمال القتال
المستمرة للأسري العراقيين في دفع آلاف الأطفال ان
ساحة الموت في حرب ألم ما يمكن أن توصف به أنها
مجردة وفاسدة.

وإذا كان مجلس الأمن الدولي لا يبق عند جريمة أسفاط
الطائرة وأن يختص وقته ومناقشاته لها، بل أن ينظر
اليها ويتناولها بالبحث من حيث كونها جزءًا من هذه
الحرب المستمرة بين العراق وإيران. فإن ينظر إليها
ويتناولها أيضاً من موقف العراق الذي يعده للسلام
والاستقرار ووضع النظام الإيراني، الرفض لهذا السلام
وهذا الاستقرار.

وإذا كنا مع إدانة الجريمة الأمريكية باعتبارها عملا مفجا
ومع التحديد بتوجيه الصواريخ الأمريكية إلى طائرات
المدنية. فلتش مع ضرورة أن تكون الناتجة من امام
مجلس الأمن لقيادة العراق رقم 498 والمتعلق بالحرب
العراقية الإيرانية، فقد القرار ينص صراحة على اثال
العقوبة بالطرف الراضف لوقف الحرب، وعلي فرض
الحصار الصحي والعقوبي والاقتصادي على الطرف الذي لا
يقبل به وحتى الآن فإن النظام الإيراني ما زال عن
موقفه من رفض القرار وتعهد موقفه من استمرار الحرب
ثم تأتي الأخبار عن صفقات تسليحية جديدة تعقد معه
النظام، يهدف تدبير المنطقة وفرض كل أشكال التحيز عليها.
وعليه فلا يكفي أن يصدر مجلس الأمن قرارا بالتحديد والإدانة
العامة للجريمة الطائرة ولكن مسؤوليات تفرض عليه أن
يصدر قرارا جديدا يفرض العقوبات على النظام الإيراني
ولا تكن أن قرارا مثل هذا سبب استنفاره. إذا أقرت
الولايات المتحدة وألمانيا السوفيتية وفرنسا وبريطانيا
لا يزال أن يصدر، وفي هذا معيار للسياق موقف هذه
الدول الحالية من الحرب العراقية الإيرانية، وسوى
الذي يظل كاما استنكاراً لمسار الاتحاد للكراف
يجب مباشرة أو بصورة غير مباشرة على استمرار الحرب.
السلام .. مسؤولية دولية ..

الدكتور عماد حسين، WHICH IN English means "Doctor Imad al-Husain, WHO IS".

وقد وصفت في المحاضرة التي ألقاها الحسين، الصحراء الواضحة، للأمسية الدولية، بالمختلفة التي يتعين عليها أن تسومها، وهي أن غياب السلام عن مختلفين، والتعتاذ الإسرائيليين الذين يبنون على الانتفاضة بالرغم من المجاعة. ويأتي الاختلاف بأن المشكلة الفلسطينية جوية، النزاع العربي الإسرائيلي بالإضافة إلى الترسانت النرويجية الإسرائيلية، وعوامل تهديد جهانية وشيكة، ما لم يتخذ العالم أجراءات أمنية. هنا نشبة النزاع في المنطقة، بشكل نهائي.

ومع ذلك، اقترح الحسين، أن العرب، من قيمهم منظمة التحرير الفلسطينية قد أعربوا عن استعدادهم، لتحمل مسؤوليتهم، وذلك من خلال مشروع قانون، والقرارات التي أصدرها المجلس الوطني الفلسطيني، في الجوانب، وإن الأمر يتوقف على التعاون المتبادل، الذي يحمل الإسرائيليين على الانضام بالرغم نفسه، وسيتم بالذات عند المؤتمر الدولي، لحل السلام في الشرق الأوسط، وذلك على أسس الإنسانية الإسرائيلية من كافة الأمراض المحتملة، ومعن الشعوب الفلسطيني الفرصة، للمشاركة حقاً في تقرير المصير، فوق الذيل الفلسطيني.

وقد حرص الحسين، على أن يوضح، أن البديل من المؤتمر الدولي، هو الإتفاق حول الأسلوب، والطرق التي يجب اتباعهما. لنفيضي كافة بنود القرارات كاملة وحسن تحية لحل القضية الفلسطينية، والنزاع العربي الإسرائيلي، من كافة جوانبه.

وهذا يعني، أن المؤتمرين لا يمكن أن يكون ساحة للمشاركة على الحقوق الفلسطينية، وما إلى الآيلة المنوط بها، تمكن الفلسطينيين من ممارسة هذه الحقوق فوق واحدهم الوطني. لا شك في أن هذا التوضيح، لا يدع مجالاً للمحاولات الإسرائيلية، التي تهدف إلى تغيير المؤتمرين، من محتمة، وتجربة إلى حقل استقبال روحي، أو حتى حلبة للمساومة العلمية!!

ان التحدي، الذي وجهه الحسين، للإمساك الدولية، من فوق، من خلال جامعة كبرى، جدير بأن يدرك جميع المجدين للسلام في العالم، ليمرسوا دورهم، في بلويرة عالم دولي حقيقية، يضع حدًا للهضدان الإسرائيليين، وتخطاف الأفلاط، لإرساء السلام العدل والشامل في المنطقة، لأن في ذلك مصلحة للأمساك الدولية جميعها، وضماناً أن لا يتطور من مختلفنا، الشر الذي يپمر النار فوق كوبينا..
التطرف الإسرائيلي
لا يغفر موقعاً

لم تكن الانتخابات الإسرائيلية، رهانا عريانا في يوم من الأيام...
ولذا، فإن النتائج التي أسفر عنها، أخيرا. لا تدخل...
ضمن حسابات الربيع والخسارة على الصعيد العربي...
وإن كانت لا تخلو من المؤشرات، التي لا يمكن اغفالها...
وفي طليعتها، أن هذه النتائج، قد أظهرت المزيد من...
التطرف، ضد عملية السلام، وأحدث، بطرق اليه...
اصبح أكثر صعبية، من اي وقت مضى...
وفي ضوء هذه الحقيقة، تتأكد القناعة بضرورة تنظيم العمل...
العربي القومي الموحد، على النحو الذي يجعله مؤلاً...
لمسرحية شتى الخيارات، طالما أنها تهدف إلى النهاية، إل...
إرساء السلام العادل والشامل، المبني على استعادة...
الحقوق المخصصة، وتحكيم الشعب الفلسطيني من...
ممارسة حقوقه الوطنية. فوق أرضه...

ومهما يكن شكل السلطة، التي ستتكاثف في الكيان الصهيوني...
نتيجة للاختيارات الأخرى، فإن الموقف العربي، الذي...
يطالع بعد المؤثر الدولي، الزود بالصلاحيات الكاملة...
سيبقى ثابتا لا يغير.. كذلك، سيبقى الموقف الإردني...
القومي، الداعي إلى بناء القوة الذاتية العربية، وإل...
والراض خلقه، يكون الدين، بدلاً عن الشعب...
الفلسطيني، في عالمية السلام، أو ممثلا له، ثابتاً دون أي...
تغير، وفي الوقت ذاته، سيواصل الشرق، القيام بدوره...
الإيجابي، تحت نظامية العربية. في سبيل استعادة...
السلام الحقيقي للمنطقة، وهو السلام الذي لا يمكن أن...
يتحقق، دون أن يستعيد الشعب الفلسطيني، حقوقه...
فوق أرضه.

وهذا يعني بكل وضوح، أن خيار السلام، هو وحده المطروح...
عربياً، وأنه لا مجال للمساءلة عليه، من قبل أي سلطة...
تتشكل في الكيان الصهيوني .. وغني عن التذكر، إن...
الموقف الإردني، بهذا الشأن، هو موقف ثابت .. وقد...
يرتمى التجربة على أنه أقوى من كل الضغوط التي...
تعرض لها .. وسيبقى كما يعهده العرب، رأساً لا...
يتزعزع.
نموذج مشرق...

تمشيا مع العلاقات الأخوية الوثيقة، بين عمان و بغداد. جاءت زيارة العمل السريعة. التي قام بها دولة الرئيس بيد الرفاعي، الى العراق الشقيق أمس، حيث استقبله سعادته الرئيس صدام حسين، وثبت اجري السيد الرفاعي مع السيد طه باسن رمضان، محادثات بناية للتعزيز التعاون المشترك بين البلدين الشقيقين، وتبادل الرأي بشأن الوضع العربي الراهن.

وكذا: يترجم الأردن والعراق، الاتفاق العربي، الذي يحكم علاقاتهما. فالمسارم قومية مستمرة، تدخل مكتبها نموذج مشرق ومنشر، مما ينبغي أن يكون عليه العلاقات العربية...

ومن المثير أن هذا النموذج قد تسبح حضوره في التأكيد الإردني اللامحدود للعراق، وفي التعاون العراقي اللامحدود مع الأردن، وكان النموذج ذاته. ولا يزال مؤشرة على أن الوضع العربي، يمكن أن يسوء ملامحه المروعة، لإن التزام العربي بالمسؤولية القومية، باستطاعة أن يحقق هذا الهدف، أن الجماهير العربية، وهو ترى في العلاقات الإردنية العراقية.

وتحت ابتسامة ثرواتها، وثوابنا العربي جدير، لا يسبح الا أن تؤكد دعوتنا. ان تحقيق المزيد من السنوات العربية، الذي يتميز بالشوارع، إلى الممارسات، ذلك أن التأكيد المثبت هو الذي من شأنه أن يتيح للعرب مواجهة التحديات، التي تهددهم ويتبع لهم. إن بحاسبا دورنا أساسيا، في تحرير عصر السلام في المنطقة، على النحو الذي يعيد للمجتمع المفقودة.

ويجعل المنطقة واحة للعلم والاستقرار.
على مشارف انجاز عظيم

من خلال الحديث الجامع، الذي اضطر به جلالة الحسن، الـ صحفية السياسية الكويتية، يليد بوسيوج، أن الإرادة العربية، على مشارف انجاز قومي عظيم، يمثل في الكيان الذي يسعى جلالة إمارة الدولة العربية شرقي البحر المتوسط، ان 있어 كيان يعد أول قيامة بين دول المغرب العربي، ليشكل هذان الكيانان، مع مجموعة دول التعاون الخليجي قوة عربية، تحت هيئة الجامعة العربية.

وتناسب عن القول، ان كيانات يضم الأردن والعراق وسوريا ومصر واليمن الشمالي، من شأنه أن يحقق الجزء الشرقية، وربما القوة العربية زعيم عسكري كردي، لم تحقق لهم، في يوم من الأيام، وهي من أهم المدارس لتحديد ميزان القوى في المنطقة وحل المشتتات الإسرائيليين في عادة النظر في حساباتهم، والقول بالسلام الحاضر الشامل في المنطقة، الذي لا يزالون يقاومونه، ويجلدون دون انطلاق سيرته حتى الآن.

ولما شك، في أن هذه القوة، تكمل مشروع السلام العربي، وتستناد له فيما بعد أن تكون منظمة التحرير الفلسطينية، القرارين رقم 248 و239 ولم يعد هناك ما يمكن مطالبتها بأكثر من ذلك، ولا يخفى أن العمل الذي يقوم به الحسن، لإزالة الكيان الذي تنبثق عنه تلك القوة هو إداة قومي على مستوى يرفع فضلا عن أنه إداة واقعية تكسب عملية السلام، بعد الذي يجعلها قابلا للتنفيذ.

وكان من الطبيعي والحالة هذه، أن يؤكد جلالته ضرورة عودة مصر الشقيقة إلى الجامعة العربية، وأن يدعو إلى تحديد مباني الجامعة، على النحو الذي ينسجم مع التوجهات المزدوجة المتشابكة وإدارة العرب، وكذلك الأعرق القمة العربية العالية، وانهظام أطرافها.

إن قيام الكيان العربي شرقي البحر المتوسط سيكون انفراضة كبرى للاستقلالية اللامركزية، وسينضم الاستجابة اللامركزية للشام البيروني الذي ينتمي، جمال الانتفاضة الفلسطينية، ويشجعها، في المناطق الحاكمة، وهي الاستجابة التي تطلقها يدا، هؤلاء الأهل، وانخراطها، في الجهاد العربي في كل مكان.

وسينكر التاريخ، بالإذاعات والأخبار جميع القادة العربي، الذين يشاركون في إعادة الكيان المتشبه، وسينكر التاريخ أن الحسن بن طلال: كان الداعم والممسك لأعظم أبرز قوام في الحقبة الماضية.
نرحب بالتحرك الياباني

بارتياً، وفقاً في تعزيز العلاقات الإردنية اليابانية المميزة.

نرحب بزيارة السيد سوسوكى أونو، وزير خارجية اليابان، الذي وصل إلى البلاد، في نطاق الجولة التي يقوم بها في المنطقة.

أن هذه الزيارة والمحادثات التي جرت خلالها بين سمو الأمير الحسن ثان، رئيس الوزراء، والسيد أونو.. فضلاً عن الرئيس تاكيجي، ووزير خارجية اليابان، ووزيرين الاتصال، للذين ساهموا في ذلك، كان تنويعاً للجهود التاجية الممدوحة التي تبذلها سمو الأمير الحسن، خلال الزيارة الأخيرة التي قام بها، إلى اليابان، والتي استطاع خلالها أن يضفي على العلاقات الإردنية اليابانية المزيد من القوة، والفاعلية.. ومن هنا، ينبغي أن بوضع أن النجاح الذي حققه سمو في تلك الزيارة، هو من العوامل الأساسية، التي شجعت توجه الإكتراب من قضايا المنطقة، والقيام بالتحرك الذي يقوم السيد أونو فوق صاحته..

وإلى أن التذكير، أن القرار الياباني للاستفادة، هو توجه لتنظيم اليابان، لمواقيت الإردن، والشراكة، لتعاون اقتصادي ودبلوماسي، لدعم عملية السلام في المنطقة.. وهذا كله يجعل من اليابان قوة قادرة على السماح للدولة في تحقيق السلام الحاد والشامل في الشرق الأوسط.

ويضوع هذه الميقات جميعاً، يمكن القول أن التحرك ذاته هو مؤشر إيجابي، يؤكد أن قضية السلام في المنطقة، قد استطعت أن تجاهله، قوة صناعية كبيرة، في ظل هذا المثالية.. عل낱 هذه القوة، يتأثرها الاقتصادي المميز، تتطور الجزء، تمثل دوراً هاماً، لإعادة السلام والاستقرار في المنطقة.. وتعزز القضاء، بهذا الدور، أن للبيان موقف ثابت، تدعو إلى استهلاك إسرائيل من جميع الأراضي العربية المحتلة، وتناهية الحرب العدائية الإسرائيلية، بدون تأخير.

مرة أخرى، نرحب بالسيد سوسوكى وزير خارجية اليابان.. ونعتذر عن التأخير في المستقبل المرجع، الذي سيزيد العلاقات الإردنية اليابانية، قوة.. وسزاح العلاقات العربية اليابانية، عناية ونعمه..
انتفاق اليمينيين: قوة للعربي

الانتفاق الذي تم التوصل إليه بين شطرى اليمن لحل المسائل الحدودية المعلقة والاستثمار المشترك للتلفظ بين البلدين هو خطوة هامة في سيرته اليمن شطريء، وهو انتصار لدراسة العقل على الجهل، وإدارة المحبة على الكرامية، فافهم عند واهل صنعاء بحاجة إلى العمل الودودي المشترك وبحاجة ماسة إلى اموال النفط من أجل بناء وطنهم الذي قاسي الكثير.
وعانى اليمنيين طيلة سنوات طويلة من الحاجة والغفلة، والجبهة العربية لم تكن بحاجة إلى نزف جديد يضاف إلى النزف العربي المستمر. لذلك قول انتفاق شطري اليمن بالتناقل والفرح من الاقتراب العربي ومن الشعوب العربية التي قاست وتقاتى كما قاست اليمن من الفراق والتناحر والاقتتال العدسي بين الإشقاء.

ان نضط اليمن هو قوة للعرب، وهو خير لشعب اليمن ولا يجوز ان يكون الخير عامل فرقة وتناحر بين أبناء الوطن الواحد. بل ان الاستثمار المشترك للتلفظ في المناطق المتنازع عليها سيضيف قوة للروح الودودية التي يعيشها أبناء اليمن، الذين برونين في وجود شطرتين لوطان واحد كارثة وطنية وقومية.

ان زمناً قفيراً موحداً هو أفضل الفراة من وطن غني مقاتل. قد ابناء اليمن اغلب من النفوذ ووحدهم وكرامتهم اهم من الدولات. لكي ان تم اتفاق أبناء اليمن على الاستثمار المشترك لخيراتهم ووقوعها هذه الخيرات لصالح شعبهم ونفاذة تنمية وطنية ترفع من مستوى معيشة الناس وتوفر لهم الحد الإدراة من متعلم حياة الكريم.

لذلك كله قول انتفاق شطري اليمن بالفروحة والابتسام في صفوف الشعب اليمني والشعوب العربية وعلى امل ان يكون هذا الاتفاق فتحاً لتفاهمات أخرى بين الشطرتين تعيد للوطن اليمني المجزور وحدته والشعب اليمني شروط حياة كريمة ونظيفة.
الأسلوب الخطأ في الموقع الخطأ

الوطن 12/25/1984

بيدو أن بعض المشتركين بالسياسة في الشرق الأوسط قد احتقرأوا اختيار الموقع الخطأ والوسيلة الخطأ لتمارسهم في المواجهة والتصالح.

وبيدو أن أساليب خطط الطائرات قد أصبح الاكثر روحا، والآخر في الايام لدى هؤلاء، فالآمر يصبح قرب محذور، إن فريق التهديد والابتكار في مواجهة الأداة، وحين يصبح الاختيار، ساحة الكويت، وحين تكون الأداة، طائرة في الجو تنقل الأبرياء والعزل، الأطفال والناس، حين يكون ذلك هو الاختيار فان السؤال الطبيعي، ما ذهب الذين حكمت عليهم الأداء وساعتهم الصديقة لطائرة سبعة.

وبصرف النظر عن الضحايا الإدارة، فإن السؤال الأهم الذي ينبغي أن تطرحه على هواة "الطيارين الرائعين" ما هي قاعدة ذلك؟ وما هي السواقي التي كان فيها الاتهام وسيلة تغيير سياسة أو عمل ثوري كبير؟ إن طالب الرصاص التي تتعلق في الظلم، الطائرات التي تختلف في السما، والقنابل التي تنس في المنشات تستطيع أن تصبح دوماً وما يrna لتخريف الممارسات من القصص المجهزة والمسلية والمثيرة... ولكن.. هل يصنع ذلك شيئاً حقيقياً في قضية تحري أو قضية تغيير؟ تلك هي القضية، وإذا أكانت الأوبئة التي تقول أن مطالب المستفيدين هي الأعراض عن أديلوا في قضية التغيير، بتكون في 순اء الاختيار، هنالك أن يكون التهديد والابتكار وملاحظة، على حكم قضائي عادل، وهلاّ قات من أديلوا أي قصة للدفاع والتدريب ما يشاعونه من دفعه؟

الأسئلة كثيرة وكأنها تقول: الاختيار الخطأ لوسيلة خاطئة، في موقع خاطئ.
مرحباً بالدولة عاصمة الانفصالية

لأنه يُريد جميع الفلسطينيين في إعلان فتحه بإعلان الدولة الفلسطينية المستقلة! أجل هذه الحركة الثقافية الوقائع حتى على الأنتبه الفلسطينية بات في جناية واحدة من أمور وثائق الدول العربية الفلسطينية تتوافق العالم على حالة غالبًا عينة تأتي وصولًا جاهزًا، هي أن هذه الشعب المعركة القائمة على ركوده الطبيبة المستقلة على ركوده.

وقد ضاعت أصول رافعة في إعلان هذا عناها بعيدًا عن آفاق المجد وخصوص الهجوم الفلسطيني المستقلة التي أطلقها متحدثاًdéال invite القوه الإقليم بإعلان الإحتلال الصهيوني والضغط على ليديه ويداعي إعلان الدبلوماسيين في كافه إنجاب تزويدهم بلغة جائحة لا تدعو في النناءات رغم السقوط البيروقراطية في الارض الفلسطينية المحتملة، رغم النزاع الإسرائيليين المستمر لمئات السنوات، ورغم أكثر من قضية حديثة وجميلة ما زالت مشروعة في وجه الفلسطينيين هنا وهم.

لكن مثل الفلسطينيين الم互利 لم يكن في إعلان في الأستقلال في لحظة مضت خطوة وسنية. يُبد على إنسان مثل المستقلة التي قبلاها المحتفلين المستقلة على اليهود السياسي الذي صدر عن المجلس الوطني، فإن ذلك المثال في أكثر من حقيقة لولا الإقلاع الأولي والتابعة وعقد مبادرة الدبلوماسيين والتحليل الشفوع في الواقع الفلسطيني كحد دوامة القدرة الإدارية، وعند الإدراك الأولية حول الإعلان السابع لتحرير فلسطين، واستمر في هذا النمت يجعل الدول التطبيق مكونة حتى من دول العالم التي طالما شرعت بالإستقلال الفلسطينيين وقامهم بهيجهم إلى السلاح لحل الخلافات.

ولكن بعد ذلك كان هذه الفرصة التحسينية الفلسطينية وهذه المستقلة التي تمكن الجماهير من مواجهة الشعوب هو العيان الناتل في ذلك السفة الذي يدأج والحوار بين المسؤولون الإسرائيليون وبعض الأوربيين مع هذه الأنان الذي إنتاج أكثر من حلولهم وتوظيفهم.

أما الإسرائيليين فقد تركت تماماً عضية هذا الإعلان الذي وصفه رئيس وزراء العدو استطاع شابير بانه حاله في سلسة كاظم الفلسطينيين ضد إسرائيل. وهم Colon كذاك، محلمة، مقة غير ملزمة، فإن كلاً كلاً يعانى في هذه الحقيقة قد يكون صعبية وخطوة بياينة مثل هذه من النضال، ف нет بالرد على هذه الرسالة، والرفاق، فكان الربح من هذه الخطة خطط في موطنهم الذي يحمله بقول مسلمي يعرف اجاجهم فإنه من معدون، فإن النشاط قد أدى أو الأربور من الهيمنة لا يكون خطة، فبعد ما زالت صفة تنغمس بما كان دائمًا.

ربما مرة جديدة، وانصار صغير سحق بعفل عناصر يعده لا أن أغلى أو أن أغلى، إذ أن هذا الدخان مباشرة، الانفصالي للاراضي المحتلة، لوالاً الإستقلال ما كان باليد، ووذل الإنتعاضة ما كان بهذا الإنسان، من دون إنتعاضة ما كان بهذا الإنسان، من دون إنتعاضة ما كان بهذا الإنسان، من دون إنتعاضة ما كان بهذا الإنسان، من دون إنتعاضة ما كان بهذا الإنسان، من دون إنتعاضة ما كان بهذا الإنسان، من دون إنتعاسي. 

تسرع طبقه المعركة، و🌸 في كل يوم.

مرحباً بالدولة عاصمة الإنتعاسي!
لا يمكنني قراءة النص العربي المحوري من الصورة.
الطائف... بداية المشوار الطويل

حسناً فنقلت المملكة العربية السعودية حين استضافت فور_Destroyer المهن في المحطات الإقليمية بفندق السفارات، ورغم ذلك هنالك وجود حزام عازل في خارج السفارة مما يعني أن لمدة محط职位 في الحزام هناك. 
وفي رابعاً أن الوقت قد أصبح مناسباً جداً نظراً للموقف السوفيتي الإيجابي والرغبة الجامحة لدى القيادة السوفييتنا لحل المشاكل الإقليمية. كما أن الوقت قد أصبح مناسباً بعد أن أتفق جميع رؤساء المصالح الإقليمية بطرق الحوار السياسي بدلاً من النوع الذي لا توصل إلى فائدة.
سواء لمزيد من الدمار والخراب.
وتعتقد أن الأفكار الجديدة التي وقعتها فور محل إجماع هو قاعدة لا يساوا لها للإفادة نحو حل المشاكل الإقليمية، وهذا أن يتم إذاً وأصبحت مصالح المسلمين أو وقفل كل شيء قبل مصالح بعض القوى الدولية التي لا تريد أن تهوي التزوير في أفغانستان. بل أن تتفق جميع الدول العربية وحدها، وتشهد بذلك بأن هذه الأرض الإسلامية وفيرة الجمال والجمالية لحواراً دولياً بين المسلمين، وهي بالنهاية لا ترى أن ترى أسباباً سوقياً من أفغانستان ولا ترى حل حلماً لما هذا يتعارض مع سياسة أميركا الإقليمية التي هي في دون الواقع الدولي أمرًا مناسبًا لاستمرار سياسات التسلح، وسياسات الصحراء الإقليمية التي تدعنا الشعوب الإسلامية ثمّةً ب뀝نها.
ومع هذا فإن الرعاية السعودية لهذه المهام تتجمع في وقتها وتصبح المسلمون وحدها في القوى، بينما يزداد الخطر والخطرة الرئيسية، بل إن تجاه السعودية فتح الرحلات في حل النزاع بالطرق السلمية، سيصبح القانون والقانون في الوصل بين المشتركون، وسياحة الدخول المشتركة الممثلة في الحضور، والاعتراف والتقدير الإقليمي بين الدول الإسلامية وخاصة في شبه القارة الهندية.
وانتهت الحرب العراقية الإيرانية وانتهت الطفولة الإقليمية سيستغل هذه المنطقة لان تنفس هذه المهام مرة أخرى، وأن تكون شعب الحرب العراقية والإمارات العربية والطائفية التي تقدمها للشعوب الإسلامية تم تقدمها.
سواء مصالح أعداء العرب والمسلمين.
ولذلك تتبع أنماط التي ميالة الطفولة بإعتبارها بداية تمثاول طول من المليارات التي تؤدي في حال نجاحها إلى إزداد وتقدم هذه المنطقة، وهو أمر meaningless والعجل إعدادات على التوتر الدولي وعلاقاً للطائف الإقليمية، ثمانية والتحدي بالحرب الجغرافية والحدودية التي استمرت وفروض مزيد من المراد والمستمسكات، والطرق والصناعات النفطية الإسلامية بداية مناقتصاد بسلاح باخم العتم في حروب لا تعلم لها ولا تنام!!
الوطن 1985/11/9

عصاب الحسناءُ!!

لم تكن تنتهي أحداثات العام الجديد، حتى بدأت تطول أحداث دعوة السلام، بمدناً في ساحة الشرق الأوسط، إلا أن وجدت تصريحات للكوادر في تلك القضية، حتى تبادل في عواصم أخرى إلى حد يجعل المفاوضات يجب لها التناغم السياسي بين أعمال اليوم.

في وقت ظن فيه المستشار النمساوي السابق، والسياسيين السابقين مع إسرائيل، على عام 1985، تأكد أن المفاوضات في منظمة التحرير، وحل الدولتين، في مملكة عربيات في منطقته الشرق الأوسط، تمثلت في إشراك كل المفاوضات «تيزوته» بين، وأوبن، ولد بن مساعد، لغة الإشاعات، بوجه اجتماع، من أجل التفاوض على مفاوضات السلام في المنطق.

فإن الملك القبرصي جبريل شريف، على العرب بمنحه السلام الجديد، فإن يكون أكثر واقعيةً، وعلى منظمة التحرير أن يشكل الحكومة المنفي، ولا ينبغي أن يستجد نشر أي حرب جديدة بين العرب وسورياء، بينما تؤول معركتها، وستكون أن الحرب، مندوات،ISTERED-LAE، LELI.I، يلتحب المفاوضات من لجأ إلى الشركات العربية.

لا يمكن أن يرى مثابرة في هذه الظروف والمعلومات، تضفي جديداً لمواعيد المطالبة بتأمين ذلك الحسابات التالية للحالة الأمريكية والفردية من القضية الفلسطينية، أي أن هذا، والظروف المحلية على أبعد تقدير، ولكن المشكلة الحقيقية في هذه الظروف السياساوية، أنها لا تكتمل من حيث المبدأ مع ما طرحه الدراسة قبل كاب فيلي، وتم تسليط من حيث النتائج إلى ما وصل إليه في كاب فيلي، وهي الخروج بصفة متزايدة على حساب القضية الفلسطينية عامية، والإبادة الفلسطينية خاصة.

وإذا كان من الصعب إصدار حكم على أي مبادرة لم تتم، إلا أننا تعتقد أن أي مبادرة أمريكية جديدة لا يمكن أن تكون من مبادرة ريفان، إلا أن بعدها، تвлажн، وإن نتائجها آمنة، تتقدم النسخة النهائية لشعبة النقضية شبيهة بذك، لم تغادر الجبهة الفيزيولوجية بين الفلسطينيين الفسهم والمواص.

فالمضي في رأينا في أن الولايات المتحدة الأمريكية غير مؤهلة أن تلعب دور الحضارة والحكم في وقت واحد.

ومع ذلك، في التاريخ الذي أثبت دوره، لذا نحن في屬於е من الدور. لم يعد الاستيزي الأمريكي وسط مواقف معتقد بشكل صحيح، وأننا نتطلع إلى إدخال الاستيزي، وتسريح القادة في الضفة الغربية للصراع العربي.

وأدى التفاوض ليؤدي إلى اسستعصم من الإحتلال الأمريكي، كاستدلال، أن الوضع المثالي، من الولايات المتحدة الأمريكية، قد يكون جزءاً من الانتفاضات الأمريكية،

وإلى أن كانت هذه بداية الاحتفالات العربية في السنة الحديثة.

كيف سكون في نهاية؟!

*
الزريعة الأمريكية والاختيارات السالفة

بالأسوأ زار صاحب السمو أمير البلاد قاعديًا على السلام واجدد الجوابر الجيوسيين وبالاخرًا من كبار ضباط الجيش والقوات المسلحة. وإن كان طبيعياً أن يقوم صاحب السمو مثل هذه الزيارة التقليدية لهذه القضية المهمة من قضايا الدولة. فإن ما جاء في كلمة سمو النبي وحدها لإذاعة من أفراد القوات المسلحة إنها تعبير الفهم الدقيق للمصادر القوية والمبادئ الصحيحة لما يمكن أن تقوم به من حقوق على السيادة وحماية لها من العداء والطاغين.

فهذا البلد الطيب لا يريده الشر لأحد ولكنه في الوقت نفسه لا يريد أن يلقى الشر من أي طرف كان أو جهة كان. ولعل هذا الفعل يكتسب معنى خاصاً واجبنا في ضوء ذلك الحقيقة السالفة. وهي أن القوى عاشت على حافة آخر الحروب الإقليمية دفعتنا لمدة ثمانية سنوات تمتلك خلالها من قيادة السفينة التي يبر الزهر في البحر لم تتوفر المدافع على ضرورة من/at

إن الإدارة القوية يجب أن تشير في خط مترابط مع بناء القوات المسلحة. كلاهما من شأنه أن يحمي البلاد ويكون سلوكها ويكشف استمرارها.

وفي ضوء هذا الاعتقاد فإن جواب الإفهام كان واضحًا عندما أدرك أهمية تغيير ونحوية القوى المسلحة. وأهمية جعل النفر

في إمكانية هذه القوى بحيث تكون العدوان الواثق للهويت. والتأكيد في الوقت نفسه أن التزام الكوديج تجاه شقيقاتها

العربية.

لكن هذا ليس سوى صفخ تجاه هومي الكويد الكبيرة. وهي هومي تشمل العالم الثالث ودولي حركة عدم الأنحياز ودولي العالم الإسلامي والوطن العربي الكبير. وفي القلب من DSLين. وعلي خلط قليل صاحب السمو ما قاله إلى مخصوص أكبر

واعتمام أساسية في القرن العشرين.

قال سمو أن المسؤولين العرب لو عملوا بيد ومثابة وصدقوا به ودعموهم لترسن قسطاً ومن زمر. وعلي هذا الحدث نقاط جذابة كثيرة. وليبير إلى السطح حقائق كبيرة. إلا أن أكثرها سطوعًا هو أن خطر إسلام

بشكل قسطاً ومن ثم يهدي العالم العربي والإسلامي. وإن كان تصريح الطريق أن شرع الحقائق فإن النص الإخري يمثل في الإعداد لتجاوزات سلبية ولهذا هو جوهري حيث صاحب السمو.
REFERENCES


The complete set of rules developed for the system is presented in Appendix 1. Here the strategies to implement the rules and the actions triggered by the system, e.g. the recommendations displayed on the screen during consultation are discussed in detail. In Figure 4.1 the structure of the rules for the purification part of the process is presented. It is important to notice that there is a defined articulation within the knowledge base that provides the system with an orientation towards finding the solutions through the search space. This is achieved forcing the reasoning to evaluate defined hypothesis as part of the left hand side part of the rule, as a condition that the system will verify. This inference evaluation process conducted by NEXPERT is deductive, or backward chaining. It can be made at many levels and can involve many rules. The reasoning tends to be more straightforward and the final goal is achieved more rapidly (Anon, 1991d).

![The rules network for recovery](image)

**FIGURE 4.1** The rules network for recovery

### 4.1 Basic definitions for consultation

The left hand side condition of the rule "introduction" (see page 195) is always true, so the hypothesis hypo_aa0 is assigned the value TRUE. The actions in the right hand side of the